

# APULEIUS AND LYLY

Linda Edwards Rawlings

A Thesis Submitted for the Degree of PhD  
at the  
University of St Andrews



1982

Full metadata for this item is available in  
St Andrews Research Repository  
at:

<http://research-repository.st-andrews.ac.uk/>

Please use this identifier to cite or link to this item:

<http://hdl.handle.net/10023/15499>

This item is protected by original copyright

AIEN APISTEYIN



THIS BOOK WAS PRESENTED  
TO THE LIBRARY BY

*the Author*  
.....  
*June 1982*  
.....

ProQuest Number: 10171343

All rights reserved

INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.



ProQuest 10171343

Published by ProQuest LLC (2017). Copyright of the Dissertation is held by the Author.

All rights reserved.

This work is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code  
Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

ProQuest LLC.  
789 East Eisenhower Parkway  
P.O. Box 1346  
Ann Arbor, MI 48106 – 1346

APULEIUS AND LYLY

---

A Dissertation Presented to  
The Faculty of the Department of Humanities  
University of St. Andrews

---

In Partial Fulfillment  
Of the Requirements for the Degree  
Doctor of Philosophy

---

by

Linda Edwards Rawlings

Spring, 1982.





Th 9605

### Abstract: Apuleius and Lyly

This work is a study of the contribution which Apuleius' Metamorphoses made to the development of the Euphuistic style apparent in John Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. While not proving conclusively Apuleius' direct influence on Lyly's work, it does provide a sound argument that Metamorphoses exhibits the same Euphuistic elements present in Euphues. To illustrate the similarities between these two works, a study of the authors' lives, of thematic similarities in the works, of the origin of Euphuism, and of the grammatical devices in both works has been included.

The authors' lives are examined primarily in respect to their education and works, along with an analysis of probable influences on their writing styles. Furthermore, the influence of Adlington's translation of Metamorphoses and of Lyly's Euphues on the Renaissance Period in England is considered. Within this study, the two works are presented as possible autobiographies.

Besides an analysis of the authors' lives, a discussion of theme and plot similarities reveals that each work deals with a protagonist's difficulties due to his reckless curiosity. Ultimately, both heroes are punished for their curiosity (Lucius in his transformation into an ass and Euphues in his loss of Lucilla), and both heroes receive some mercy

(Luic<sup>u</sup>s through his dedication to Isis and Euphu<sup>e</sup>s through his vow to forsake women and to pursue education).

An analysis of Euphuism's origin begins by defining the Euphuistic style Lyly employs and by studying the Asianic influence on that style. Moreover, an examination of past theories concerning the origin of Euphuism is included as they represent conflicting opinions on that source. At this point, a discussion of Apuleius' debt to the classics illustrates that both Apuleius and Lyly draw upon the same sources in creating a Euphuistic style, though both of these authors exhibit similar stylistic traits which set them apart from these sources.

Having surveyed various theories on the origin of Euphuism, an analysis of the development of style in Apuleius' Metamorphoses and Lyly's Euphu<sup>e</sup>s: The Anatomy of Wit is organized into two separate chapters: one deals with the usage of individual letters (including annomination, transverse alliteration, assonance, consonance, and rhyme), while the other concerns the usage of the word as a unit (antithesis of ideas and sounds, isocola, pleonasm, personification, puns, repetition, rhetorical questions, and classical allusions).

Finally, conclusions regarding the authors' similarities in style are drawn. Here, the stylistic differences due to the two separate languages employed and common factors present in both works are examined in detail. A complete frequency chart of grammatical devices in both works is included to document clearly the evidence presented.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The author of this work wishes to acknowledge especially the important assistance which was given by Professor Robert M. Ogilvie, Chairman of the Department of Humanities at St. Andrews University. Though he died shortly before this work was bound, he provided much insight and criticism during his four years as advisor on this project. A word of appreciation is also due to Professor Douglass Parker of the University of Texas in Austin, who served as an advisor and enabled the author to use the library at that university, and to Professor Donald Rude of Texas Tech University in Lubbock, who kindly answered questions in regard to information on Lyly and Euphuism. In addition, the author appreciates the kind encouragement and guidance of her husband and parents during many long hours of work. Without their assistance the endurance necessary to complete such an arduous task might have been lacking. Finally, a note of appreciation is due certainly to Rotary International which provided the graduate fellowship which initiated this study and my correspondence with the people of St. Andrews. To all of these people and many others, I owe a great deal of thanks.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction.....	i
CHAPTER	
I. The Life and Education of Apuleius and Lyly.....	1
II. The Origin of Euphuism.....	22
III. The Development of Style in <u>Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit</u> and <u>Metamorphoses</u> - The Usage of Individual Letters.....	41
IV. The Development of Style in <u>Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit</u> and <u>Metamorphoses</u> - The Usage of the Word As a Unit.....	64
Conclusion.....	98
V. A Complete Listing of Selected Grammatical Devices in <u>Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit</u> .....	102
VI. A Complete Listing of Selected Grammatical Devices in <u>Metamorphoses</u> .....	205
Bibliography.....	293

## INTRODUCTION

Though the term "Euphuism" was first coined by Gabriel Harvey in the late sixteenth century, the source of Euphuism has been a question which has plagued scholars for several centuries. Indeed, no satisfactory explanation of its source has yet been offered. Popular opinion was divided on this question even during Lyly's lifetime. Some people praised him for creating a "new English,"<sup>1</sup> others recognized that he merely "hatched the egges, that his elder freendes laide."<sup>2</sup>

In 1884 Landmann concluded that Lyly was indebted to Guevara for his literary style, and in 1902, Bond concurred with this conclusion and added the names of North and Pettie as sources for the Euphuistic style.<sup>3</sup> In 1894 C.G. Child elaborated on the Euphuistic elements of Lyly's works by citing numerous examples of grammatical devices, and in

---

<sup>1</sup>William Ringler, "The Immediate Source of Euphuism," PMLA, 1938, p. 679.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 683.

<sup>3</sup>R.W. Bond, ed., The Complete Works of John Lyly (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 1902), I, p. 138.

1910, Feuillerat wrote a book stressing Lyly's debt to the classics for his ornamental style.<sup>4</sup> Croll, in 1916, suggested that "Euphuism was merely one manifestation of the general medieval tradition,"<sup>5</sup> and William Ringler supported this theory with the addition of his "missing link" in his 1938 essay, "The Immediate Source of Euphuism." In this essay, Ringler asserted that Lyly and his literary contemporaries were influenced primarily by the popular lectures of John Rainolds, a member of Corpus Christi College at Oxford in the sixteenth century.<sup>6</sup>

Assuredly, there have been numerous explanations of the source of Euphuism, though only passing references have been made to its Asianic heritage. Though there can be little doubt that Euphuism owes much of its origins to the general epidemic of the ornamental manner of speaking and writing which plagued students and lecturers at Oxford during the Renaissance, one cannot overlook the pervading presence of the classical works widely imitated and emulated during this time. One such work was Apuleius' Metamorphoses.

Louis Purser, to whom history is indebted for his inciteful work on the tale of Cupid and Psyche in Metamorphoses, suggested that Apuleius' work recalled "the obvious manner-

---

<sup>4</sup>A. Feuillerat, John Lyly (Cambridge, 1910)

<sup>5</sup>Ringler, p. 678.

<sup>6</sup>Ibid.

isms of Euphuism."<sup>7</sup> Strangely enough, however, Purser noted that Apuleius' much published work influenced the Renaissance and post-Renaissance works of Spenser, Heywood, Marmion, and Shadwell, though he failed to link directly the "obvious mannerisms of Euphuism" to its logical Euphuistic source, Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. Regardless, his observation failed to radically change any theories concerning the source of Euphuism. Like the theories of his predecessors, his comparison stopped short of becoming a well-documented conclusion.

In the following chapters, I shall endeavor to show the stylistic similarities between Apuleius' Metamorphoses and John Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. In establishing this similarity, I have found it necessary to include a study of their lives as well as a brief study of the Asianic style of writing which led to the development of Euphuism. The detailed frequency chart, along with the arguments presented in this paper, indicate that Apuleius is the ultimate source of Euphuism. Though we may never conclusively prove that Lyly had read Apuleius' Metamorphoses, the similarities between the two authors' styles of writing cannot be overemphasized. The question is not whether or not Lyly had read Apuleius' work (though there is much evidence to support this idea), but whether or not Metamorphoses is the first example of the Euphuistic style of writing.

---

<sup>7</sup>Louis C. Purser, ed., The Story of Cupid and Psyche (London: George Bell and Sons, 1910), Intro., p. xc.



CHAPTER I  
THE LIFE AND EDUCATION OF APULEIUS AND LYLY

Though the primary purpose of this study is to explore the writing styles of Apuleius and Lyly, no research of these authors would be complete without a study of their lives and education. Such a study not only will afford a better opportunity of viewing their similar literary styles, but also will provide further evidence for the argument that Lyly was significantly influenced by Apuleius. Whether or not this influence was direct or indirect may never be proven conclusively; however, there are certain irrefutable similarities between Apuleius, a Roman-African writer circa 125 A.D., and John Lyly, an English author circa 1552.

Apuleius was born in 124 or 125 A.D. at Madaura, a Roman colony in Africa. Madaura was, no doubt, one of the centers of Roman influence in Numidia, and the city apparently had "given itself up to the domination of the Romans."<sup>1</sup> Here, Apuleius received his earliest education. While his father filled the highest municipal offices, his family held an important position within the city.

---

<sup>1</sup>Gaston Boissier, Roman Africa (New York: The Knickerbocker Press, 1899), p.245.

Having inherited a large sum of money from his prosperous father, Apuleius traveled first to Athens, where he received his university education, and then to Rome and Carthage, where he began his career as a writer and lecturer. At some point in his travels, he fell under the influence of the priests of Isis and was converted before he left Greece. While in Rome, Apuleius professes to having taught himself the Latin language.<sup>2</sup> Having spent his considerable patrimony in acts of generosity to his instructors and friends and in travel, he was forced to earn a living in Rome. He acted as a pleader in Roman law-courts and remained diligent in his religious duties to Isis and Osiris. It is in Rome that Bossier believes Apuleius composed Metamorphoses, though the exact time of its origination is certainly debatable. Bossier sees Metamorphoses as a "youthful production" and feels that it would naturally fit into this time in Apuleius' life since he was undergoing a sort of crisis.<sup>3</sup> This theory would place the writing of Metamorphoses prior to Apuleius' trial for practicing magic. Certainly, Bossier is speculating here since Metamorphoses was not mentioned in Apuleius' defence at his trial. It is just as logical that the work was written in retrospect after Apuleius became a priest and after he had earned his reputation as a magician.

---

<sup>2</sup>W. Adlington, trans., Apuleius: The Golden Ass (London: William Heinemann Ltd., 1977), p. 2. Apuleius relates: "Mox in urbe Latia advena studiorum, Quiritium indigenam sermonem aerumnabili labore, nullo magistro praeunte, aggressus excolui."

<sup>3</sup>Bossier, p. 248.

Apuleius' travels next took him to Carthage where he gained further notoriety as a speaker and writer. Eventually, statues of him were erected in his honor both at Carthage and abroad. On one of his travels to Alexandria (circa 155 A.D.), Apuleius renewed his friendship with Pontianus and married his mother, Pudentilla. Since Pudentilla was a wealthy widow and much older than Apuleius, her relatives brought legal action against him on the grounds that he had used witchcraft in gaining her love. Thus ensued the bitter trial in which Apuleius defended himself. His confident manner of speaking in Apologia, his defence at the trial, indicates that the charge was both absurd and unsubstantiated. With his acquittal, he returned to Carthage where he became one of the most honored and popular literary men in the province, and in 161 A.D., he held a priesthood position.<sup>4</sup> As a result of the publicity he received in his trial and especially after the writing of Metamorphoses, he was ranked among the professors of magic. Although he was proficient in the arts he had acquired from priests in his travels, there is no evidence that he possessed or exercised miraculous powers. No doubt, the "absurd misapprehension of his fable of the 'Golden Ass' for true history"<sup>5</sup> greatly enhanced his reputation as a magician.

---

<sup>4</sup>Boissier (p. 251) suggests that even though Apuleius won his case, much suspicion about him persisted.

<sup>5</sup>John Lyde Wilson, ed., Cupid and Psyche: A Mythological Tale from the Golden Ass of Apuleius (Charleston, South Carolina: B.B. Hussey, 1842), p. v.

During the second half of his life, Apuleius' chief occupation was in giving eloquent and philosophical addresses before the literary men in Africa. He enjoyed associating with people of position and wealth and eventually became "the greatest orator of his time."<sup>6</sup> Out of this career came several scholarly works: the Florida, a collection of public speeches; "De deo Socratis," an essay on Socrates; "De dogmate Platonis," an essay on the doctrines of Plato; and "De Mundo," an essay on the world. Through these works, scholars have discerned a great deal regarding Apuleius' character, fame, and unique writing ability. In commenting on Florida, for example, Boissier notes, "He who made this collection was not a man of taste or of sound judgment; his work often shows glaring faults; he admired assonance and antithesis more than reason,"<sup>7</sup> an observation which might be equally applicable to Lyly. Apuleius gave some attention to philosophy in his work; he greatly admired Plato and incorporated his philosophy into his lectures. No doubt, however, philosophy served as a pretext: "No one knew better than he how to turn a phrase and make a period in such a way as to charm the ear."<sup>8</sup>

His public addresses aside, Apuleius' most famous and influential work was Metamorphoses, one of two surviving Roman novels.<sup>9</sup> The work is certainly autobiographical to some

---

<sup>6</sup> Boissier, p. 255.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 251.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 253.

<sup>9</sup> P.G. Walsh, The Roman Novel (Cambridge: University Press, 1970), p. 142. Here, Walsh makes the distinction between Petronius' The Satyricon and Apuleius' Metamorphoses. He points out that perhaps The Satyricon has a better claim to being a novel than Metamorphoses, since Apuleius' work is more a romance than a novel. Regardless, only these two works have any claim to this classification.

extent. Apuleius plainly represents Lucius as a young man, like himself, "who had left the University of Athens and was writing of his experiences abroad."<sup>10</sup> These experiences reach a true parallel to Apuleius' own life in Book XI when Lucius finds conversion through Isis. Purser suggests that Apuleius added this book to confirm his religious convictions after a disreputable life.<sup>11</sup> Indeed, Apuleius' work is much more than "a jocose Latin rendering of a timeless Greek story."<sup>12</sup> Though the story is a fable, it does convey a moral of profound religious solemnity; it is in one aspect, a forerunner of the picaresque novel. At the close of Book XI, the reader cannot dismiss Lucius' (and Apuleius') realization that wisdom is gained through the contemplation of religion rather than through experimentation in magic.<sup>13</sup>

The story itself comes from a Greek legend of which there were several versions and from Lucian's Lucius or The Ass. Apart from its philosophical intent, the story concerns the trials and tribulations of Lucius, a young man who is changed into an ass while experimenting with magic. He knows that he will be able to regain his human form after he chews on roses. The plot set, the subsequent ten books involve the often gruesome and licentious adventures Lucius encounters on his journey back to manhood, both physically and philosophically. Metamor-

---

<sup>10</sup> Purser, Intro.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid.

<sup>12</sup> Walsh, p. 142.

<sup>13</sup> Metamorphoses, pp. 582-3.

phoses was not immediately popular with readers of Apuleius' day. It became famous only after Apuleius himself had earned fame as a literary and scientific man.<sup>14</sup> Once popular, however, it is probable that "people read it eagerly, but in secret, without daring to admit the fact."<sup>15</sup> It is interesting to note here that the same statement might apply to a Renaissance reading of Metamorphoses as well.

One final point needs to be made in the discussion of Metamorphoses regarding its popularity during the Renaissance in England. Though few critics have connected Metamorphoses with the development of Euphuism, the many editions between 1469-1650 of Apuleius' work attest to its popularity.<sup>16</sup> The first edition of the works of Apuleius was printed in Rome in 1469. Thereafter, the work was published by Bualdus at Venice in 1504 and reprinted in Paris in 1510 and in 1536.<sup>17</sup> In England in 1566, William Adlington, writing from University College, Oxford (Lyly entered Magdalen College at Oxford in 1571), dedicated his translation of Metamorphoses to the Earl of Sussex. His translation must have been popular since "it was reprinted three times in the next thirty years, and once again forty years later still; and the great rarity of all these editions is further evidence that they were appreciated and constantly read."<sup>18</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup>Purser, Intro.

<sup>15</sup>Bossier, p. 257.

<sup>16</sup>Purser, Intro.

<sup>17</sup>Wilson, p. vi.

<sup>18</sup>Metamorphoses, Intro., p. viii.

Moreover, we know of specific Renaissance writers who were influenced directly by Apuleius' work. In 1590, there are allusions to the tale in Spencer's Faery Queene (iii, 6, stanzas 50-1), and in 1636, Thomas Heywood published "Love's Mistris," an argument taken from Apuleius. In 1637, Shackerley Marmion published a poem in heroic couplets based on Apuleius called "A Morall Poem intituled 'the Legend of Cupid and Psyche, or Cupid and his Mistris.'" Shadwell, in 1675, wrote a Psyche which was slightly founded on Apuleius.<sup>19</sup> These numerous examples of published editions and imitations of Apuleius' Metamorphoses indicate not only that he was popular, but also that he was considered worthy of imitation. Though he may have been primarily considered a magician to the Middle Ages, to the Renaissance, he was the "entertainer, narrating stories which enthralled and enlivened the imagination."<sup>20</sup> To a period in history which celebrated "liberty of thought and frank self expression,"<sup>21</sup> Apuleius was a welcome contributor.

Though the exact date of John Lyly's birth has never been confirmed, we can speculate that he was born circa 1552.<sup>22</sup>

---

<sup>19</sup>Purser, Intro.

<sup>20</sup>Elizabeth Hazelton Haight, Apuleius and His Influence (Norwood, Massachusetts; The Plimpton Press, 1927), p. 111.

<sup>21</sup>Ibid.

<sup>22</sup>G.K. Hunter, John Lyly (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1962), p. 39. Hunter explains that if Lyly matriculated at Magdalen College in 1571, as the register there indicates, his birth was probably in 1554. However, since the register which records this date contains some students who were in college before that date, and since Lyly received his B.A. in 1573, perhaps 1552 is a more likely date of birth. The normal course of study for a B.A. was four years.

His father was Peter Lyly, the brother of George Lily and son of William Lily, the famous grammarian.<sup>23</sup> In 1554, Peter Lyly inherited the land in Odiham which George Lily had lost when he was accused of engaging in treasonable practices. Conforming to the Anglican settlement, Peter Lyly settled in Canterbury. We can be fairly certain that John Lyly was reared here since his matriculation at Magdalen College refers to him as a Kentishman.

As a young student, Lyly probably attended the Cathedral Grammar School (or King's School) in Canterbury. Since Lyly's father was an official of the diocese, he could have arranged his son's admission to this school. Regardless of what specific school he attended, certain conclusions can be drawn regarding the general educational curricula of sixteenth century grammar schools. The principal function of Tudor grammar schools, as established by Erasmus, Colet, and William Lily at St. Pauls, was "to inculcate good morals and clean Latinity."<sup>24</sup> Certainly at such a school, John Lyly would have learned the basic principles of rhetoric and composition through the study of classical authors. Though he probably studied most Greek texts through Latin translations, he might have been exposed to some Greek if he studied Erasmus' New Testament. Baldwin relates that the major Greek writers and poets studied were Lucian, Demosthenes, Herodotus, Aristophanes, Homer, Euripides, and Menander. Major Roman writers studied were Terence, Plautus,

---

<sup>23</sup>Hunter, p. 36. Unless otherwise noted, the source for biographical information on Lyly's early life is taken from Hunter's study which is based on Feuillerat's Appendix of Pieces Justificatives.

<sup>24</sup>Ibid., p. 38.



Vergil, Horace, Cicero, Caesar, and Sallust.<sup>25</sup> Though Apuleius is not on the list of suggested authors, perhaps because he was considered more African than Roman, it is significant that Lucian was studied. Indeed, a grammar school knowledge of Lucian's rhetoric might well have led to the perusal of other works by Lucian, perhaps even Lucius or The Ass. The next logical connection is obvious. Once familiar with Lucian's tale, a youth could hardly resist the popular translation of Metamorphoses which Adlington brought to the Renaissance reader. Though this argument may seem tenuous in light of Renaissance morals, certainly a great deal of controversy existed over what should or should not be read by the student.<sup>26</sup> One cannot put aside the question here as to what part the Renaissance student played in the selection of his own reading material. Although one might assume that he adhered to the recommendations of his teachers, I recall Euphues' argument regarding his immature youthfulness with the old gentleman in Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. With a particularly independent nature, which was no doubt present in his early youth as well, Euphues (Lyly) responds:

In my iudgement Eubulus, you shal assone catch a Hare with a Taber, as you shal perswade youth, with your aged & ouerworn eloquence, to such seueritie of lyfe, which as yet ther was neuer Stoycke so strict, nor Iesuite so superstitious, neyther Votarie so deuout, but would rather allow it in words the follow it in workses, rather talke of it then try it. Neither were you such a Saint in your youth, that abandoning all pleasures, all pastimes, and delygths, you would chuse

---

<sup>25</sup>T.W. Baldwin, William Shakspeare's Small Latine & Lesse Greeke (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1944), I, p. 80.

<sup>26</sup>Ibid., p. 113.

rather to sacrifice the first fruites of your lyfe to  
vayne holynesse, then to youthly affections.<sup>27</sup>

Thus, in studying classical education during the Renaissance, one must realize that he is also studying "the importation of social pretensions."<sup>28</sup> We know, for example, that "pagan authors formed the staple of the curriculum at St. Pauls from the beginning,"<sup>29</sup> even though the statutes for the school dictated that only Christian authors should be studied. If the illicit love studied in Terence did not worry the educationalists of the Tudor period,<sup>30</sup> would the reading of specific selections from Lucian's or Apuleius' tales have been cause for alarm?

One final point needs to be made regarding the emphasis placed on studying style in sixteenth century grammar schools. Indeed, this emphasis further supports the reading of Apuleius' works, since it is primarily in style that a comparison between Lyly and Apuleius is made rather than in subject matter. Students were encouraged to study vocabulary, ornament, style, and schemes of words and sentences. They were expected to look for outstanding ornaments of speech and to remember that "the best teacher of style is the pen."<sup>31</sup> Thus, Lyly, along with his contemporaries, was naturally led toward the development of a Euphuistic style. In studying rhetoric, Isocrates, Demos-

---

<sup>27</sup> R.W. Bond, ed., The Complete Works of John Lyly (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 1902), I, pp. 193-4.

<sup>28</sup> Hunter, p. 40.

<sup>29</sup> M.L. Clarke, Classical Education in Britain (Cambridge: The University Press, 1959), p. 6.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>31</sup> Baldwin, p. 83.

thenes, and Tully furnished the models,<sup>32</sup> as well as Cicero with his letters.<sup>33</sup> Isocrates and Cicero are especially important here since both of these authors have been hailed as specific sources of the Euphuistic style. Again, one must question why Apuleius' name was not on the prescribed list of authors to study for the benefit of style, since his writing certainly recalls "the obvious mannerisms of Euphuism."<sup>34</sup>

Regardless of where Lyly attended grammar school, we are certain of where he received his university education. He matriculated at Magdalen College at Oxford in 1569 (or 1571), where Laurence Humphrey, a Calvinist theologian, served as President. With the foundation of Corpus Christi College in 1517, Oxford was the first university to receive the new learning brought about by the advancement of Humanism. The Latin professor was charged with delivering daily lectures on selections from Cicero, Sallust, Valerius Maximus, Suetonius, Pliny, Livy, Quintilian, Virgil, Ovid, Lucan, Juvenal, Terence, or Plautus, while the Greek professor lectured on Isocrates, Lucian or Philostratus, Aristophanes, Theocritus, Euripides, Sophocles, Pindar, Hesiod, Demosthenes, Thucydides, Aristotle, Theophrastus or Plutarch.<sup>35</sup> The Humanist tradition was continued further by John Rainolds, Greek Reader at Corpus Christi College from 1573-1578. He delivered a Euphuistic prose in his lectures at the college between 1572-1578 (during the time Lyly was in attendance at Magdalen College) and has been hailed by some

---

<sup>32</sup>Ibid., p. 102.

<sup>33</sup>M.L. Clark, p. 12.

<sup>34</sup>Purser, Intro., p. xc.

<sup>35</sup>M.L. Clark, p.22.

scholars as the immediate source of Euphuism.<sup>36</sup> Though I agree that it is likely Lyly heard the popular lectures of Rainolds during his university career and that Rainolds may well be the "immediate" source of Euphuism, it is important to remember here the influence of Isocrates and Cicero, two important contributors of the Asianic style which brought about the development of Euphuism.

Apart from a general overview of the education at Oxford during the Renaissance, we are able to draw some conclusions regarding Lyly's particular education. A reading of the passage from Euphues in which Lyly cites the crimes of the University of Athens (or Oxford) reveals that the university's chief aim was the importation of social pretensions:

And heere I cannot but lament Athens, which hauing ben alwaies y<sup>e</sup> nurse of Philosophers, doth now nurrish only y<sup>e</sup> name of Philosophy. For to speake playnly of y<sup>e</sup> disorder of Athens, who doth not see it, and sorrow at it? such playing at dice, such quaffing of drinke, such dalyaunce with woemen, such daunsing, that in my opinion ther is no quaffer in Flaunders so giuen to typplynge, no courtier in Italy so giuen to ryotte, no creature in the worlde so misled as a student in Athens.<sup>37</sup>

Ironically, these social pretensions seem to be exactly what caused Lyly to rebel while a student at Oxford, though later in his life, he himself became a courtier of Elizabeth pursuing his career as a playwright. Another objection Lyly had to his university education was the study of logic and philosophy, pre-

---

<sup>36</sup>William Ringler, "The Immediate Source of Euphuism," PMLA, 1938, p. 681.

<sup>37</sup>Euphues, p. 273.

sumably because such dry studies were not edifying for a student of the liberal arts. In one of the letters following Euphues, Lyly writes:

Yet may I of all the rest most condemne Oxford of vn-kindnes, of vice I cannot, who seemed to weane me before she brought me foorth, and to giue me boanes to gnaw, before I could get the teate to sucke. Wherin she played the nice mother in sēding me into the country to nurse, where I tyred at a dry breast three yeares, and was at the last enforced to weane my self. But it was destinie, for if I had not bene gathered from the tree in the budde, I should beeing blowne haue proued a blast, and as good it is to bee an addle egge as an idle bird.<sup>38</sup>

Hunter points out that the three years to which Lyly refers probably pertain to Lyly's period of study for the M.A.<sup>39</sup> We know that in 1574, Lyly tried unsuccessfully to obtain a fellowship from the university, despite his request for Lord Burghley's assistance. Thus, it does seem probable that his failure to obtain a fellowship "opened this fluid vein of academic discontent"<sup>40</sup> which surfaces in Euphues. At any rate, we know that Lyly was an independent student who would not have been restricted to the reading of authors sanctioned by the university. If he had not read Adlington's translation of Metamorphoses earlier in his education, certainly he was ripe for such an opportunity in his discontent with the rigid university curriculum. Indeed, he appears to have possessed the same headstrong curiosity which affected both Euphues in Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit and Lucius in Metamorphoses. His Oxford life "was marked by a madcap temper, some disregard of the authorities, and some

---

<sup>38</sup>Euphues, p. 325.

<sup>39</sup>Hunter, p. 43.

<sup>40</sup>Hunter, p. 45.

neglect of prescribed studies,"<sup>41</sup> and, as Gabriel Harvey relates, he engaged in "horning, gaming, fooling, and knaving."<sup>42</sup> Regardless, Lyly's achievement of a B.A. in 1573 and an M.A. in 1575 attests to his hard work at Oxford. Apparently, "he read much, and remembered it."<sup>43</sup>

Following his university career, Lyly moved to London in about 1576, and in 1578, Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit was entered in the Stationer's Register. The sequel to this work, Euphues and his England, was published in 1580 and marked the crest of Lyly's literary reputation. By 1581, five editions of Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit had been published and four editions of Euphues and his England.<sup>44</sup> Forsaking prose for play writing, Lyly then wrote plays for the Elizabethan Court. He presented Campaspe and Sappho and Phao from 1583-4 and Gallathea in 1588. Thereafter, Endimion (1588), The Man in the Moon (1591), Midas (1592), Mother Bombie (1594), Love's Metamorphosis (1601), and The Woman in the Moon (1597) were written though none achieved the success of his first two plays since Lyly had lost most of his connections of the Elizabethan Court by 1588.<sup>45</sup>

---

<sup>41</sup>Euphues, pp. 7-8.

<sup>42</sup>Hunter, p. 42.

<sup>43</sup>Euphues, p. 12.

<sup>44</sup>It is at this point in Lyly's life that Bond suggests Lyly may have been accused of practicing magic, an accusation which was also brought against Apuleius. Bond bases his argument on one of Gabriel Harvey's references to Lyly as "The White Son of the Black Art." Bond adds further credence to this idea by suggesting that such a charge was the reason for Lyly's use of witchcraft in "Endimion, as also the Sibyl in Sappho, the wise woman Mother Bombie...and even the Alchemist in Gallathea." (Euphues, pp. 29-30)

<sup>45</sup>Hunter, p. 77.

Though he sat as a member of Parliament in the Elizabethan assemblies of 1589, 1593, 1597-8, and of 1601, he spent his later years in sorrow. His friends of power did nothing to help move him back into the graces of the elite society, and his own petitions to Elizabeth for some comfort and fortune availed him nothing. In 1605, Lyly was destitute, and in November of 1606, he died as a disillusioned man repentful for the years he felt he had lost playing the courtier to this Renaissance society and queen.<sup>46</sup>

Like Apuleius' Metamorphoses, Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit is autobiographical to some extent and is considered a singular representative of the novel. Just as Metamorphoses is one of two surviving Roman novels, Euphues is "nothing less than the first English novel, the first holding-up to English men and women of the mirror of their own life and loves."<sup>47</sup> Interestingly enough, the protagonist of both novels had left the University of Athens to write of his experiences abroad. In Euphues, "the contrast between Athens and Naples, the Univer-

---

<sup>46</sup>Hunter, p. 85.

<sup>47</sup>Euphues, p. 159. (In John Lyly - p. 51, Hunter argues that the soliloquies in Euphues call to mind a play more than a novel. He is bothered also by the letters attached to the end of the work. Though I appreciate his view, it is important to remember that Lyly's primary intent was to illustrate a particular kind of writing style. The soliloquies and letters in Euphues provide the best opportunity for relaying rhetorical questions and antithetical statements unimpeded by the logical coherency of ideas within the narration of characters. Viewed in this light, the soliloquies and letters are not as important in the structure of the whole work as they are in the conveyance of specific grammatical devices within the text. Certainly, the eight plays which followed the publications of his two prose works illustrate that Lyly knew the distinction between the genres of prose and play writing.)

sity and the metropolis, is an essential part of the contrast between learning and experience, wit and wisdom."<sup>48</sup> Indeed, the same contrast is evident in Apuleius' portrayal of Athens and Rome, the former being the center of education and the latter being the center of experience. I have already shown that Lyly's own life is evident in the introduction of Euphues in his depiction of the University of Athens (Oxford) as a school which bred social pretensions. In addition, Lyly opens the dedication of the sequel to Euphues, Euphues and his England, with a description which further confirms the autobiographical aspect of his work. Lyly states: "The first picture that Phydias the first Paynter shadowed, was the portraiture of his owne person."<sup>49</sup>

Euphues itself is the tale of a young man who learns that wit must be accompanied by wisdom. Shunning the advice of Eubulus, an old gentleman who obviously represents Oxford and wisdom, Euphues embarks on a journey of feigned friendship and love. After meeting Philautus and vowing friendship to him, Euphues falls in love with Philautus' girl, Lucilla. The two, Euphues and Lucilla, declare their love for each other, despite the objections of Philautus and Ferardo, Lucilla's father. Eventually, Euphues finds that he is to receive the same fate he had dealt his friend. Lucilla forsakes Euphues to marry Curio, and the love triangle is dissolved. Having renewed his friendship with Philautus, Euphues then vows to forget women and to return to his studies in Athens.

---

<sup>48</sup>Hunter, p. 61.

<sup>49</sup>Euphues, p. 2.



Though Metamorphoses and Euphues are most similar in their writing styles, several interesting parallels can be made regarding the sequence of events in each tale. Indeed, in light of the popularity of Adlington's translation during Lyly's life, such parallels further support the idea that Lyly's Euphues may be more than coincidentally related to Metamorphoses in style and in purpose. In both stories, despite ample warnings, the hero's curiosity and thirst for experience lead him into situations over which he has no control. In Metamorphoses, "the hero's curiosity is stigmatised as the cause of his humiliating metamorphosis."<sup>50</sup> Lucius shuns the advice of Byrrhaena to beware "a malis artibus et facinorosis illecebris Pamphiles illius,"<sup>51</sup> and he disregards the foreboding tale of Aristomenes which relates the fate of Socrates "'qui voluptatem veneriam et scortum scortum Lari et liberis praetulisti.'" (1.8.14) In addition, the priest in Book XI relates that Lucius' noble lineage and education had availed him nothing: "...nec tibi natales ac ne dignitas quidem, vel ipsa qua flores usquam doctrina profuit,...curiositatis improsperae sinistrum praemium reportasti.'" (11.15.562) Similarly, Euphues ridicules the advice of the old gentleman, Eubulus (who represents wisdom and the university), who warns:

Alas Euphues by how much the more I loue the highe climb-  
inge of thy capacitie, by so muche the more I feare thy  
fall. The fine christall is sooner crazed then the harde

---

<sup>50</sup>Walsh, p. 176.

<sup>51</sup>Metamorphoses, p. 56. All examples are cited from the authors' works as edited by R.W. Bond and G.P. Goold.

marble, the greenest Beeche burneth faster then the dryest Oke,...the most delicate wyt is allured with small enticement vnto vice, and moste subiecte to yelde vnto vanitie, if therefore thou doe but harken to the Syrens, thou wilt bee enamoured, if thou haunte their houses and places, thou shalt be enchanted. (p. 189)

Along with these failures to heed warnings are the characters' failures to discern their own folly. While at dinner with Milo, Lucius, for instance, establishes himself as the "philosopher who fails to foresee the dangers to which he exposes himself."<sup>52</sup> He observes:

*Sunt* Prima huiusce divinationis experimenta, nec mirum licet modicum istum igniculum et manibus humanis laboratum, memorem tamen illius maioris et caelestis ignis velut sui parentis, quid is esset editurus in aetheris vertice divino praesagio et ipsum scire et nobis enuntiare. (2.12.66)

In a similar manner, Euphues' discourse on love, also delivered while eating with friends, reveals that he, too, fails to foresee his own vulnerability. Euphues asks: "Contrarywise if we respect more the outward shape, then the inwarde habit, good God into how many mischiefes doe we fall? into what blyndnesse are we ledde?" (p. 202) In both novels then, the heroes cast aside omens and common sense only to be lured by sirens of a sort; Apuleius is bewitched by the charms of Pamphile's magic, and Lyly is charmed by the physical beauty of Lucilla. In a typically neo-Platonic concept of love beginning in the eyes, Lucius relates:

Et subveni maturius: nam, ut vides, proelio, quod nobis sine fetiali officio indixeras, iam proximante vehe-

---

<sup>52</sup>Walsh, p. 178.

menter intentus, ubi primam sagittam saevi Cupidinis  
in ima praecordia mea delapsam excepi, arcum meum et  
ipse vigorate tetendi et oppido formido ne nervus rigoris  
nimietate rumpatur. (2.16.74)

Lured by the physical beauty of Fotis then, Lucius enters into a relationship with a woman who introduces him to the art of Pamphile's witchcraft. Likewise, Euphues relates:

So it is Lucilla, that coming to Naples but to fetch  
fire, as the by word is, not to make my place of abode,  
I haue founde such flames that I can neither quench  
them wyth the water of free will, neyther coole them  
wyth wisdom. (p. 218)

Thus, both heroes brush aside the cautions of friends and the lessons taught by philosophy and literature to become involved in sexual slavery. Certainly, Lucius' and Euphues' attractions to their respective lovers are not cultivated through time and careful thought. Both Lucilla and Pamphile work a sort of magic on the heroes though this is not an excuse for the heroes' involvement. Indeed, Lucius and Euphues are guilty as charged of unbridled passion and curiosity - a popular theme of both Greek fables and, subsequently, of the Renaissance.<sup>53</sup>

Another similarity between the two novels lies in their attitudes toward friendship. In both tales, the hero's troubles are amplified when the hero chooses to follow his own lustful desires rather than to honor the obligations of friendship. In

---

<sup>53</sup>This notion of unbridled passion is evident also in the women of the tales. Consider, for example, Lucilla's rationalization that her love (lust) for Euphues is justified (p. 205), and Psyche's similar rationalization in her love for Cupid (6.5.256). Significantly, both authors use a series of rhetorical questions to emphasize that the characters are rationalizing.

Book III, Apuleius refuses a dinner invitation offered by his cousin, Byrrhaena, in preference for spending the evening with Fotis (3.12.118). Thus ensues the lustful relationship which introduces Lucius to magic, even though Lucius surely knows what happens to men who place passion before an obligation to friends. Likewise, Euphues casts off the friendship of Philautus in favor of winning Lucilla's affections, though Euphues knows full well the "force of friendship" he had vowed previously (pp. 198-9). Assuredly, Lucius is as enslaved to Fotis as Euphues is to Lucilla.

In both Metamorphoses and Euphues, a day of reckoning arrives for the hero. In Books IV-X, Apuleius suffers the punishment for his reckless curiosity when, living literally as an ass, he suffers at the hands of bandits and of a sadistic boy. Euphues experiences a similar desperation when, having forsaken Philautus, he is forsaken by Lucilla. Mercy is granted in each case. In Book XI, a section which is distinctly separate from the rest of Metamorphoses, Lucius' devotion to Isis allows him to pass "from the animal life of coupling and guzzling to the higher contemplation of the true reality."<sup>54</sup> Moreover, in the letters attached to Euphues, the hero reveals that he will forever after resist the lustful temptations of earthly beauty and will dedicate his life to the study of the sort of wisdom found in books (Oxford). In both novels then, the hero's task has been to distinguish between

---

<sup>54</sup>Walsh, p. 183.

the two kinds of love Apuleius describes in his Apology. In applying this theme to Metamorphoses, Walsh observes: "There are two Venuses, one for beasts and the common herd of men, one for the few."<sup>55</sup> Having experienced the former, the latter is pursued by Lucius (Apuleius) through Isis rather than magic and by Euphues (Lyly) through the wisdom of education rather than experience. Thus, the curiosity which had damned them both is overcome by their newly found celibacy and wisdom.

---

<sup>55</sup>Ibid.

## CHAPTER TWO

### THE ORIGIN OF EUPHUIISM

Though the term "Euphuism" was first coined by Gabriel Harvey in the late sixteenth century, the source of Euphuism has been a question which has plagued literary scholars for several centuries. Indeed, no satisfactory explanation of its source has yet been offered. Popular opinion was divided on this question even during Lyly's lifetime. Some people praised him for creating a "new English,"<sup>1</sup> others recognized that he merely "hatched the egges, that his elder freendes laide."<sup>2</sup> The latter is without doubt the most popular opinion today, though to whom Lyly was specifically indebted has remained obscure. In order to adequately ascertain the source of Euphuistic prose, one first needs to understand the stylistic trends which led to the creation of this unique form of writing as well as to examine past theories regarding its origin. Such a study will prove that though "immediate" sources of Euphuism may be found in Lyly's contemporaries, the ultimate source of this style can only be found through Apuleius, though his debt to Roman and

---

<sup>1</sup>Ringler, p. 679.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 683

and Greek writers is great.

It is important to establish a definition of Euphuism before beginning a study of the writers who contributed to the development of its style and to remember that Euphuism is not the single use of any grammatical device. The Euphuistic style exhibited by both Apuleius and Lyly is one which abounds particularly in examples of well-balanced antithesis, alliteration, classical and mythological allusions, rhetorical questions, isocola and tricola, and rhyming. In order to create a Euphuistic style, an author must conscientiously and consistently strive to write prose "firstly with great fineness and precision of phrase, secondly with great display of classical learning and remote knowledge of all kinds."<sup>3</sup> It is this obsession with an ostentaciously symmetrical form rather than with a logical continuity of thought which drives Lyly and Apuleius. Though both are indebted to other classical authors for the Asianic style of writing they employ, both Lyly and Apuleius expand the concepts of writing inherent in the Asianic style far beyond its previous limitations.

Several stylistic trends led to the development of Euphuism. Though a complete study of such trends is beyond the scope of this work, a brief examination of the Asianic influence present in Euphuism leads to several interesting conclusions. It is hardly necessary to remark that the

---

<sup>3</sup>Euphues, p. 120.

Renaissance author found his greatest models for writing style in the classical languages. Indeed, Lyly, along with other Renaissance students, studied the works of Gorgias, Isocrates, and Cicero - three authors commonly linked with Euphuistic prose. We know also that Erasmus' 1528 work, Ciceronianus, renewed the conflict between Cicero and the Atticists. Ridiculing Ciceronian imitation, Erasmus preferred the plain Attic style to the ornate Ciceronian,<sup>4</sup> while the imitation of Isocrates and Cicero was upheld by those who were eventually led to the Euphuistic style of writing. Thus, the Anti-Ciceronian admired the Attic writers, "those who gave the subordination of the form to the thought,"<sup>5</sup> while the Ciceronians expressed the easy and commonplace "in the most elaborate and artificial language and in an elevated tone well-suited to recitation."<sup>6</sup>

In describing the Euphuistic style of Thomas More, Erasmus relates, "the practice of coupling synonyms is Ciceronian, and the Euphuistic tricks are Isocratic structure, which is patterned by the Gorgian figures."<sup>7</sup> Indeed, the same influence is evident in the works of Apuleius and Lyly. Gorgias (485-375 B.C.), the inventor of the Sophistic style of writing and contemporary of Isocrates, has survived

---

<sup>4</sup>George Williamson, The Senecan Amble (Chicago, Illinois: The University of Chicago Press, 1951), p. 12.

<sup>5</sup>R.C. Jebb, The Attic Orators (New York: Macmillan and Company, 1893), I, p. lxi.

<sup>6</sup>Purser, Intro., p. lxxvii.

<sup>7</sup>Williamson, p. 27.



as the "apostle of symmetry."<sup>8</sup> His method of teaching, which rested on beautiful and effective expression, re-appeared a century and a half later with the beginnings of Asianism.<sup>9</sup> Though he appears to have spoken and written always in the Attic dialect, the poetical character of his work is distinct. As the first rhetorician who conceived how literary prose might be artistic, Gorgias instinctively carried the comparison between prose and poetry "to a length which seems incredibly tasteless now."<sup>10</sup> Based on beautiful and effective expression, his speeches relied on poetic rhythm and ornament - contrast of sense, parallelism of structure, and parallelism of sound. In commenting on the Gorgian influence in Euphuism, Williamson notes that both of these authors abuse antithesis and comparison. He relates, "a Lyllian sentence can nearly always be broken down into pairs of co-ordinate propositions limited by conjunctions"<sup>11</sup> - a statement which might also apply to any number of sentences from Metamorphoses.

Closer to the Euphuistic style is Isocrates (436-338 B.C.) who was influenced by both Socrates and Gorgias. As the first Greek who gave a really artistic finish to literary prose, Isocrates maintained:

---

<sup>8</sup>Ibid., p. 32.

<sup>9</sup>Jebb, I, pp. cxxi-cxxii.

<sup>10</sup>Ibid., I, p. cxxiv.

<sup>11</sup>Williamson, p. 33.

...-and here he was completing the theory of Gorgias - that not only may prose be artistic, but that the utterance of Rhetoric may be, ought to be, a work of art as complete and as substantive as the utterance of Poetry; that it has its own ascertainable laws of rhythm and of harmony; and that the artist who, having mastered these laws, addresses himself to the treatment of a great subject, has with him a power, beside and beyond the strength of his cause or of his genius - a power coming to him, as to the poet, through his art, and springing from an essential music latent in language which his art has shown him how to bring upon the ear.<sup>12</sup>

Like Gorgias, Isocrates' stress of antithetical structure and symmetry often led to a monotonous and artificial uniformity in his works <sup>13</sup> (a criticism which applies to Metamorphoses and Euphues as well), though certainly his style was distinct.<sup>14</sup>

Somewhat similar to Isocrates and Gorgias, Cicero (106-43 B.C.) developed a style of writing which concentrated on a symmetry and rhythm used less frequently and obviously than that employed by Gorgias. Nonetheless, Cicero was criticized during his lifetime for having developed a style similar to Isocrates. Critics of Cicero and the rhetorical schools of Asia Minor called the Cicer-

---

<sup>12</sup>Jebb, I, pp. 52-3.

<sup>13</sup>Ibid., p. 59.

<sup>14</sup>J.E. Sandys, A Short History of Classical Scholarship (Cambridge: The University Press, 1915), pp. 15-16. Though Sandy makes the point that unlike later Asiatic adherents of Gorgias, Isocrates "succeeded in expanding the unduly concise and monotonous clauses of his master by moulding them into an ampler and more varied periodic form in which metrical and symmetrical effects were diversified by meaning melodies of rhythm and subtle harmonies of cadence," one must recognize also that Isocrates' exchange of a periodic rhythm for the Gorgian rhythm merely replaced one monotonous style with another.

onian style "Asiatic" and set up against it their standard of "Attic brevity, simplicity, and sincerity."<sup>15</sup> Ironically, Cicero's critics were condemning him for the same stylistic traits he abhorred in the Gorgian style. While he viewed the works of Gorgias as having "'many clever phrases, but these are like a new and immature product, choppy, resembling verselets, and sometimes over-ornamented,'"<sup>16</sup> he praised Isocrates for having finally relaxed the strictness of the Gorgian rhythm. Again, a parallel to both Lyly's and Apuleius' style of writing can be drawn. One conclusion is evident: the Euphuism Lyly and Apuleius employ possesses certain characteristics of the writing styles of Gorgias, Isocrates, and Cicero alike.<sup>17</sup> The primary difference appears to be one of frequency and purpose. Gorgias stressed a rigid symmetry of form and an abundance of poetical rhyme, Isocrates introduced a smoother symmetry and a periodic rhythm, and Cicero, whose rhetorical style was intermediate between the severe Attic and the florid Asian, combined the styles of his predecessors into a fluent diction with a somewhat redundant

---

<sup>15</sup>Gilbert Highet, The Classical Tradition (London: Oxford University Press, 1959), p. 323.

<sup>16</sup>Williamson, p. 22.

<sup>17</sup>Most critics recognize the Isocratean (and Gorgian) connection with Euphuism; however, some deny any Ciceronian influence. Ironically, these same critics view the style of Isocrates and Cicero as similar. One such critic is Highet (The Classical Tradition, p. 332) who recognized that Cicero balanced clauses in a sentence, sentences in a paragraph, paragraphs in a section, and sections one against another throughout his orations. Unwittingly, he is describing not only the writing styles of Cicero and Isocrates, but also the styles of Lyly and Apuleius.

theme. Nonetheless, all of these authors pursued the creation of grammatical devices simply for rhetorical effect. Indeed, "it is of this exuberant and over-ornamental style that Apuleius in his Metamorphoses and Florida is the most singular representative in Latin literature."<sup>18</sup> Influenced by the Asianic style of writing, Apuleius and Lyly developed that style into a conscientious and obsessive straining after effect in the form of a full-length novel. To the Asianic abuses of symmetry, antithesis, and rhyme, Apuleius and Lyly added or increased the usage of rhetorical questions, transverse alliteration, references to classical and mythological figures, isocola and tricola, and pleonasm. Though most scholars do not mention Apuleius as a source for Euphuism, one cannot overlook his repeated abuse of these devices. Recalling the "obvious mannerisms of Euphuism,"<sup>19</sup> Apuleius' Metamorphoses must be considered an important part of the Asiatic tradition which influenced John Lyly and countless other Renaissance authors.

Many theories regarding the source of Euphuism have been proposed and defended over the past two centuries. Thus far, these theories have resolved themselves into two major classes, the Spanish and the anti-Spanish.<sup>20</sup> The Spanish theory, originating with Landmann in 1884, proposed

---

<sup>18</sup>Purser, Intro., pp. lxxxii-lxxxiii.

<sup>19</sup>Ibid., Intro., p. xc.

<sup>20</sup>Violet M. Jeffery, John Lyly and the Italian Renaissance (Paris: Librairie Ancienne Honore Champion, 1928), p. 118.

that Lyly's Euphues was an imitation of Guevara's 1529 book, The Book of Marcus Aurelius, with a Diall for Princes. However, this theory has been refuted, and most critics believe that Euphuism existed long before Guevara's work. In arguing against the theory that Euphuism began with Guevara, Hunter asserted that the English translation (which was available after 1532) of the Spanish work lacked "the tricks of style which connect Guevara and Lyly"<sup>21</sup> and that there is no proof Lyly knew Spanish. In 1902, R.W. Bond suggested that North (The Diall of Princes, 1557) was the "real founder of our euphuistic literary fashion,"<sup>22</sup> since North endeavored to translate into English the stylistic traits of Guevara's work. In addition, Bond proposed that Pettie's Pallace of Pleasure (written in 1576 and influenced by North) is Euphues' exact counterpart in style.<sup>23</sup> Significantly, in explaining the source of Euphuism, Bond readily acknowledged that Euphuism existed long before North, Pettie, and Lyly, though he argued that the direct influence of Lyly's Euphuism could not be traced much beyond the beginning of the seventeenth century.<sup>24</sup> Having recognized that Lyly was somewhat indebted to Plutarch, Pliny, Ovid, Cicero, and several other classical authors, Bond commented:

---

<sup>21</sup>Hunter, p. 268.

<sup>22</sup>Euphues, p. 138.

<sup>23</sup>Ibid., p. 138.

<sup>24</sup>Ibid., p. 147.

All this attention to fineness, eloquence, and pomp of phrase is a general result of the revived study of the classics, and of the balanced oratorical prose of Cicero and Seneca, in particular.<sup>25</sup>

Indeed, the Asianic influence on Renaissance writers deserves more attention than to be classified as a "general result."

Like so many other critics before and after him, Bond ignored the stylistic traits of Metamorphoses (a work we know was both available and popular during Lyly's life).

Much has been written concerning classical influence on the development of Euphuism. In 1910, Feuillerat wrote a book stressing Lyly's debt to the classics for his ornamental style. Concurring with Norden, Feuillerat illustrated the similarity between euphuistic devices and Gorgian and Isocratic figures or schemes.<sup>26</sup> Though he saw the imitation of Isocrates in the Euphuistic style and regarded the styles of Isocrates and Cicero as similar, he distinguished the writings of Lyly from Guevara by concluding that the former relied on Isocratean imitation of rhythm while the latter relied on Ciceronian imitation of rhythm.<sup>27</sup> In contrast, Norden, who also saw Isocrates as the great Renaissance model, regarded any similarity between Guevara and Lyly as mere common imitation of Isocrates.<sup>28</sup> Agreeing with Norden, Hunter recognized the connection between Euphuism and Gorgian,

---

<sup>25</sup>Ibid., pp. 136-7.

<sup>26</sup>A. Feuillerat, John Lyly (Cambridge, 1910)

<sup>27</sup>Williamson, p. 34.

<sup>28</sup>Hunter, p. 268.

Isocratean, and Ciceronean schemes.<sup>29</sup> Significantly, however, Hunter (along with Croll) argued that though "Lyly had many of the same figures as Isocrates, the total effect produced was very different."<sup>30</sup> Both he and Croll recognized that there are many other features of Lyly's style besides those found in Isocrates and Cicero and that Lyly's devices occur with even greater frequency. However, rather than search for a work which closely paralleled Lyly's Euphues in style (such as Metamorphoses), Croll concluded that Euphuism was simply a part of the medieval tradition handed down through the Church, and Hunter supported Ringler's suggestion that Rainolds was the "immediate" source of Euphuism.<sup>31</sup> These conclusions appear to be an attempt to compromise between the theories of Norden and Feuillerat, though they hardly give justice to the grammatical devices in the Euphuistic style of writing present in Apuleius' work.

While supporting Croll's theory of the medieval tradition and its impact on the development of Euphuism, Ringler maintained that Lyly was influenced directly by the popular lectures of John Rainolds, member and president of Corpus Christi College during Lyly's life.<sup>32</sup> Ringler noted that Rainolds used typically Euphuistic schemes of isocolon, parison, paromoion--similar length, similar form, similar sound - but all of these devices are found in the works of

---

<sup>29</sup>Ibid., p. 260, 263-4.

<sup>30</sup>Ibid., pp. 268-9.

<sup>31</sup>Ibid., pp. 268-270.

<sup>32</sup>Ringler, p. 678.

Apuleius as well.<sup>33</sup> Thus, though Rainolds' lectures did contain many Euphuistic devices, we would be generalizing to conclude that his speeches influenced all of the subsequent authors who used the Euphuistic style. This conclusion, like so many other criticisms, fails to give importance to the very classical works which these Renaissance men studied and strove to both imitate and emulate in form and in style. Any conclusion regarding an "immediate" source for Euphuism is speculation at best. We can only ask the questions: would Lyly have been influenced more by what he might have heard (the lectures of Rainolds) or by what he might have read (Metamorphoses)? Was Rainolds' style influenced by his own reading of Metamorphoses? Again, I recall the evidence that Adlington's translation of Metamorphoses was popular and available, though neither Rainolds nor Lyly would have required this translation since both were capable of reading the work in Latin.

Since we cannot be certain of Lyly's immediate source for his Euphuistic style and since we know that the influential styles of Gorgias, Isocrates, and Cicero were studied by the Renaissance student, Croll's theory that Euphuism was the general result of the medieval tradition gains credence. Indeed, this theory is widely accepted today. However, though one can hardly doubt that Euphuism owes much of its origins to the general epidemic of the ornamental

---

<sup>33</sup>Ibid., p. 681.



manner of speaking and writing which plagued students and lecturers at Oxford during the Renaissance, one cannot ignore the pervading presence of the classical works widely imitated during this time. One such work was Apuleius' Metamorphoses, a work most often overlooked in any discussion regarding a source for Euphuism.

Like Lyly, Apuleius owes the development of his unique style to an Asianic influence: "Gorgias, Hegesias, and the likes of their kind are relations in spirit of this wizard of tongue."<sup>34</sup> As one of the second Sophists, Apuleius studied the Greek tongue and rhetoric at Athens. This period of study, together with the fact that the Africans were quite familiar with Greek literature,<sup>35</sup> proves that Apuleius was familiar with the Asianic rhetoric popular during his life. In illustrating Apuleius' debt to both Isocrates and Cicero,<sup>36</sup> Boissier concludes:

There it (structures creating assonance) repeats itself with a wearying insistence and like a sort of mania. But if Apuleius uses it more than others, he is not the first to have employed it. The abuse belongs to him; the use was much older than he...<sup>37</sup>

---

<sup>34</sup>Eduard Norden, Die Antike Kunstprosa (Verlagsgesellschaft: B.G. Teubner, 1958), II, p. 602.

<sup>35</sup>Boissier, p. 263.

<sup>36</sup>We must remember here one of Apuleius' opening statements in Metamorphoses, "Mox in urbe Latia advena studiorum, Quiritium indigenam sermonem aerumnabili labore, nullo magistro praeunte, aggressus excolui." (1.1.2.)

<sup>37</sup>Boissier, pp. 264-5.

In fact, the use may be traced ultimately to Gorgias who employed some of the same writing techniques. Both Apuleius and Gorgias "exploit for ancillary purposes alliteration and assonance."<sup>38</sup> Thus, as most scholars of Apuleius' style have noted, the stylistic traits of Apuleius' Metamorphoses have the same origin as the Euphuistic style displayed by Lyly.

Recognizing that both Lyly and Apuleius draw upon the same sources for their particular styles, we can examine now stylistic traits which are common in both works. Such an indepth study will reveal that both authors, whatever their debt to the classics might have been, employed highly unique writing styles. It is the similarity of these styles which sets them apart from other Asianic authors and from subsequent Renaissance imitators of the Euphuistic style. Perhaps Norden, in his comprehensive work, Die Antike Kunstprosa, best expressed this idea when he asserted, "Apuleius has surpassed everything which was before his time; he was the most famous juggler of words who has ever lived."<sup>39</sup> Such a verdict calls to mind one of many similar observations of Lyly's style:

Lyly's success was not (as the earlier critics suppose) due to his originality, rather it would seem to be due to a unique skill in combining, balancing and interrelating the various strands he inherited from others.<sup>40</sup>

---

<sup>38</sup>Walsh, pp. 64-5.

<sup>39</sup>Norden, p. 283.

<sup>40</sup>Hunter, pp. 258-9.

What common stylistic factors do both Metamorphoses and Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit share? The Euphuistic devices present in Apuleius' works have been examined in varying degrees of depth by several scholars. In describing the nature of Apuleius' style, Norden stated:

Here writes the incredible bombast with the most affected gracefulness: every trick which serves the softest melodious sound is used in a most extravagant way, such as alliteration, confusing plays of words, parts of sentences with exact correspondence even in the number of syllables and with sound-  
ing consonance at the end.<sup>41</sup>

With this statement, Norden verified the presence of alliteration, puns, parallelism of structure, and rhyme in Metamorphoses, yet the presence of these devices alone would not constitute the use of a Euphuistic style. As Bernhard, who painstakingly catalogued the grammatical devices present in Metamorphoses though he did not provide a frequency chart, relates: "The style of the novel looks ridiculous, sometimes it makes us even sick, because of the odd figures, our ears are filled up too much by the endless increase of sonorous figures."<sup>42</sup> Thus, it is the weariness we feel as we read line after line of stylistic tricks which constitutes the Apuleian style. Indeed, a reading of only a few pages from Euphues produces much the same effect.

Apart from the repeated usage of puns, parallelism of

---

<sup>41</sup>Norden, p. 600.

<sup>42</sup>Max Bernhard, Der Stil Des Apuleius Von Madaura (Amsterdam: Verlag Adolf M. Hakkert, 1965), p. 284.

structure, and rhyme, Apuleius makes frequent usage of antithesis, a device which has been justly called the most important element in the Euphuistic style.<sup>43</sup> This device, transverse alliteration, and annomination constitute the three most frequently used grammatical devices in both Metamorphoses and Euphues. Apuleius uses approximately 325 examples of antithesis to Lyly's 379 examples, 377 examples of transverse alliteration to Lyly's 331 examples, and 695 examples of annomination to Lyly's 803 examples. In addition, both authors strongly rely on references to classical and historical figures (143 examples in Metamorphoses to Lyly's 146 examples), consonance (283:198), isocola (75:145), repetition (127:250), series of rhetorical questions (66:79), and rhyme (166:157). Needless to say, both authors abuse the usage of such devices. As Bössier justly relates, "I firmly believe it was Apuleius who made this trick popular. It won a fortune after him."<sup>44</sup> Indeed, the "fortune" it won after him is evident especially in the works of Lyly, an author who received credit for a title which surely belongs to Apuleius. Purser, as far as I have been able to ascertain, is the only scholar who gave credit to Apuleius as a possible source for Euphuism.<sup>45</sup> Apuleius is, as Purser suggests, the singular representative in Latin

---

<sup>43</sup>Richard F. Weymouth, "On Euphuism," p. 3.

<sup>44</sup>Bössier, pp. 264-5.

<sup>45</sup>Purser, Intro., p. xc.

literature of this "exuberant and overornamented style."<sup>46</sup> Apuleius' numerous usages of parallelism, antithesis in structure and sound, alliteration, rhyme, assonance, pleonasm, rhetorical description, annomination, classical and historical allusions, isocola, repetition, rhyme and rhetorical questions are all evidence of his conscientious straining after effect. Like Lyly, he gave his public exactly what it requested - many elaborate descriptions which required little intellectual effort. Indeed, in Metamorphoses, Apuleius contributed a style of writing so "highly colored, fanciful, and rococo, so studiously piquant and richché, and so picturesque, varied, and opulent,"<sup>47</sup> that the characteristics of Euphuism are obviously pursued with great fervor. Thus, both Apuleius and Lyly broke away from the confining boundaries of instructive and informative literature to the freer and more natural realm of prolonged and intensified passages. Perhaps Perry best describes this important distinction between conventional rhetoric and the Euphuistic style when he writes of "two opposite forces, one active and aggressive, the other static"<sup>48</sup> which are at work simultaneously in both Euphues and Metamorphoses. These forces along with a conscientious effort to entertain through the usage of varied grammatical devices constitute the real parallel between Lyly and Apuleius. Each

---

<sup>46</sup>Purser, Intro., p. lxxvii.

<sup>47</sup>Ben Edwin Perry, The Ancient Romances (Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1967), p. 239.

<sup>48</sup>Ibid., p. 245.

contributed a "new" form for prose writing insomuch as each placed a frequent and varied linguistic expertise above philosophical instruction.

One notable distinction between Apuleius and Lyly's striving for effect lies in the area of logic. One needs only to read Perry's list of illogical incidents in Metamorphoses to realize that Apuleius is often more concerned with how he makes his point than with any logical order of thought.<sup>49</sup> In contrast, Lyly has little problem with logic, even though he often digresses from his tale with copious examples of antithetical ideas and rhetorical questions. When one considers the different lengths and plot lines of the two novels, this difference is not really disturbing. Apuleius' tale is three times the length of Euphues, and Apuleius, perhaps over enthusiastically, strives to combine many separate tales and characters within one larger story; whereas, Lyly confines his tale to the story of only three main characters: Euphues, Lucilla, and Philautus. The consequences of such a distinction are obvious. Though the structure of Euphues is so well-defined that the many digressions are not bothersome, the lack of structure in Metamorphoses produces puzzling digressions. In addition, the highly complex and involved plot of Metamorphoses naturally produces grammatical devices sown through a wide range of tales and several hundred pages, while the simplistic plot of Euphues

---

<sup>49</sup>Ibid., pp. 254-80.

naturally results in grammatical devices closely knit within approximately sixty pages. Thus, the fact that Apuleius' work is three times the length of Euphues does not necessarily indicate that the grammatical devices are used three times as frequently. On the contrary, the ratios which indicate the frequency with which these devices are used are almost equal in most cases. It is this aspect of the frequency chart research which indicates that Lyly was a better writer of the Euphuistic style than Apuleius. His logical, well-defined, and simple plot provided him all the more opportunity to exhibit his aptitude with the Euphuistic style.

Despite these differences, the works are remarkably similar in writing style. Though Apuleius was influenced by the Asianic tradition, "his style of writing is wholly individual, and is that of a man who is self-trained."<sup>50</sup> That he drew upon the Gorgian, Isocratean, and Ciceronean styles is evident, yet he developed those styles into a highly artificial and conscientious straining for effect. Though Bossier claims it is obvious that Apuleius did not speak Latin easily,<sup>51</sup> I must disagree. If Apuleius is guilty of constructing words and phrases "which do not seem to belong to the common language,"<sup>52</sup> it is due to his constant straining for "Euphuistic" techniques. Hence flow the many

---

<sup>50</sup>Bossier, p. 267.

<sup>51</sup>Ibid., p. 260.

<sup>52</sup>Ibid., p. 261. See also Purser, pp. xciv-xcvi.

illogical events and the often awkward phraseology. He, like Lyly, consistently aimed at creating a piece of literary architecture, "whose end is foreseen in the beginning, and whose parts are calculated to minister to the total effect."<sup>53</sup> Thus, though we may never conclusively identify Lyly's immediate source of Euphuism, we have more evidence in the works of Apuleius to support his claim to this title than in any other author. Regardless, Apuleius' Metamorphoses was certainly the first example of "Euphuistic" prose. The real test for such an assertion lies in the frequency with which these Euphuistic devices are used. No study of this nature would be complete without such a detailed examination.

---

<sup>53</sup>Euphues, p. 145



CHAPTER III  
THE DEVELOPMENT OF STYLE IN EUPHUES: THE ANATOMY OF WIT  
AND METAMORPHOSES -  
THE USAGE OF INDIVIDUAL LETTERS

In order to simplify the vast amount of grammatical usages within Apuleius' and Lyly's works, I have taken the liberty to segregate these devices into two major divisions which both Child and Bond use in their discussions, although there are several modifications.<sup>1</sup> In addition, I have cited examples from Lyly's work which Bond examines in his three volume study since they are excellent examples for comparing the similarities in style. The stylistic techniques of Euphuism are categorized to include: those stylistic techniques which stress the use of individual letters within a word and those techniques which use the word as a unit to convey the grammatical or syntactical importance of a group of words. The former category includes: anomination, transverse alliteration, assonance, consonance, and rhyme. The latter encompasses the use of antithesis of ideas and sounds, isocola, pleonasm, personification, puns, repetition, rhetorical questions, and allusions to classical figures.

---

<sup>1</sup>Euphues, I, p. 120.

## Analysis of Grammatical Devices

I. Annomination, or alliteration, occurs when the same consonant letter or sound is used as the initial of several words in succession or nearby vicinity, and when the same letter or sound is used as the initial of an interior syllable. This grammatical device is used primarily to emphasize a point or to emulate a sound which corresponds to the idea set forth, though it may also be used simply for its ornamental value. The use of annomination causes few difficulties in grammatical structure or in logical thought for either Apuleius or Lyly. Since annomination among words is easier to develop than the complex structure of transverse alliteration, the writers are seldom trapped in illogical statements which are the result of forced annomination. At the risk of tediousness, several examples of each grammatical device will be cited hereafter.<sup>2</sup> Examples of annomination in Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Euphues' reply to Philautus concerning his love-induced illness: "True it is Philautus that he which toucheth y<sup>e</sup> nettle tenderly, is soonest stoung,..." (page 212)

Annomination is used in the example above to stress Euphues' love malady. The touching of the nettle is expressed with a soft "t" sound; whereas, the result of touching the nettle is conveyed with a sharp "s" sound.

---

<sup>2</sup>See also the frequency chart on page 99 of this study.

- (2) a side comment (unheard by Philautus) from the same speech of Euphues: "...practise some pleasant coceipt vpon thy poore patiēt..." (page 213)

No doubt, the "p" sound is indicative of Euphues' hopeless state, yet it also conveys a sarcastic tone ("poore patiēt") since Philautus is Euphues' rival in love.

- (3) from Philautus' discourse to Euphues concerning the breach of their friendship: "...although it be sweet in the snell, is sower in the smacke,..." (page 233)

In this example Lyly illustrates the use of one sound, "s", to convey two antithetical ideas.

- (4) from Lucilla's confession of her love for Euphues: "It is Euphues that lately arryued heere at Naples, that hath battered the bulwark of my breste,..." (page 231)

The "b" sound above produces a rhythm which suggests the mental beating Lucilla endures because of her loyalty to Philautus and her love for Euphues.

- (5) from Lucilla's speech to Euphues following Euphues' confession of love: "And seeing I cannot by reason restrayne your importunate sute, I will by rigour done on my selfe, cause you to refraine the meanes." (page 223)

This antithetical statement is parallel in that the annomination of the "r" sound occurs between words which are the same part of speech. "Reason" and "rigour" serve as objects of prepositions while "restrayne" and "refraine" are verbs.

When Lyly becomes too intent on the repetition of letters

and sound, he often chooses an inappropriate word simply to maintain alliteration:

- (6) where "continuance" is used awkwardly to maintain the consonantal sound: "Philautus being a towne borne chile, both for his owne continuance, & the great countenaunce whiche his Father had whyle he liued,..." (page 199)
- (7) where "cause" is used awkwardly to produce a forced rhyming with "custome" and "country": "...custome will make it thy countrey, and an honest life will cause it a pleasaunt liuinge."<sup>3</sup> (page 314)  
or where "fainte" is used awkwardly to maintain a consonantal sound: "I neuer yet failed, and now I will not fainte." (page 212)
- (8) where a mixed metaphor occurs due to the alliteration of "caule" and "coulour": "Who so is blinded with the caule of beautie, decerneth no coulour of honestie."<sup>4</sup> (page 210)

Examples of annomination from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Socrates' explanation of his poor state: "...faciem suam iamdudum punicantem prae pudore obtexit,..." (1.6.10)  
Annomination in the statement above seems to be used primarily to create a smooth flow of words rather than to stress Socrates' shame.
- (2) from Byrrhaena's admonishment to Lucius concerning the powers of Pamphile: "Haec tibi trepido et cavenda censeo..." (2.5.56)

---

<sup>3</sup>Euphues, p. 124

<sup>4</sup>Ibid.

Annomination of the "t" and "c" sounds adds to the already repetitive statement that Byrrhaena fears Lucius will fall into the snares of Pamphile.

- (3) from Psyche's expression of joy and gratitude for Cupid's kindness: "'Mi mellite, mi marite, tuae Psychae dulcis anima.'" (5.6.208)

The close annomination in the example above produces a rhyming effect similar to that found in Euphues.

- (4) from Apuleius' account of Lucius' trial for murder: "...iamque sublimo suggestu magistratibus residentibus, iam praecone publico silentium clamante, repente cuncti consona voce flagitant,..." (3.2.102)

Note that annomination occurs immediately after the adverb beginning each clause. In the first two clauses, the four words exhibiting annomination are in the ablative case.

- (5) from Apuleius' description of Psyche carrying out the will of Venus: "...sed observatis omnibus furatrina facili flaventis auri mollitie..." (6.13.268)

To preserve the annomination above, Apuleius uses a new word, "furatrina", or at least a word not found in works before Apuleius.

Just as Lyly is sometimes trapped into following the strict regulations for a particular grammatical device, so Apuleius allows himself to be similarly ensnared. Often, a word is used awkwardly or the sense of a statement is lost to preserve grammatical unity:

- (6) An excellent example of adherence to grammatical devices producing an absurd idea occurs in Apuleius' attempt to mix poetical color with alliteration: "...et candidum solis curriculum cuncta collustrabat,..." (7.1.298)
- (7) Apuleius often seems to insert subordinate clauses at random in order to maintain simple alliteration. In the following example, the insertion of the clause appears to be misplaced, since Apuleius is in the process of describing his poor supper with Milo and his subsequent departure. In the first example, the headache seems to be a malady created precisely for the purpose of alliteration rather than as a valid explanation of Lucius' early departure: "Raptim denique paupertina Milonis cenula perfunctus, causatusque capitis acrem dolorem..." (3.13.118)

In the second example, the element of time seems inserted so that simple alliteration will occur between the two clauses: "Finitis voluptatibus vespera suadente,..." (4.4.204)

II. Transverse alliteration occurs when two, three, or four letters are used in corresponding clauses. This particular type of alliteration may be represented by a series of consonant sounds, vowel sounds, or a mixture of them both. However, in order to be classified as an example of transverse alliteration, the letters or sounds must occur transversely in a series. This grammatical device is used by the author primarily to demonstrate his capacity for making clauses or statements parallel in structure and alliterative sound.

Examples from Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Lyly's description of Euphues' character:  
 "...whereby they myght eyther soake hys purse  
 to reape commoditie, or sooth hys person to  
 wynne credite, for hee had gwestes and companions  
 of all sortes." (page 186)

This example illustrates the ability of the author both to achieve exact parallelism among words and to maintain alliteration. "Soake" and "sooth" are infinitive forms, "hys purse", and "hys person" are the objects of the infinitives, while "commoditie" and "credite" serve as objects of the infinitives "to reap" and "to wynne."

- (2) from Lucilla's soliloquy concerning the power of love: "As for me seeing I am not fedde with their pap, I am not to be ledde by their per-swasions." (page 207)

This example illustrates Lyly's common usage of both consonance and annomination to form a transverse alliterative sound.

- (3) from Philautus' discourse to Euphues concerning his loss of Lucilla's love: "Althoughe hetherto Euphues I haue shrined thee in my heart for a trustie friende, I will shunne thee heerafter as a trothless foe,..." (page 233)

Again, the words used in alliteration are perfectly balanced: "shrined" and "shunne" are used as verbs, "thee" and "thee" are used as objects, while "trustie friend" and "trothless foe" are used as objects of the prepositions.

- (4) from Ferardo's plea to Lucilla that she be of a more stable mind in love: "But alas I see in thee neyther witte to order thy doings neyther will to frame thy selfe to discretion..." (page 243)

The example above is not grammatically exact in its transverse alliteration. Although the phrases "neyther witte" and "neyther will" are parallel in structure, Lyly fails to maintain his alliteration throughout the sentence. Ideally, "discretion" should be the object of "frame," just as "doinges" is the object of "order."

Like annomination, the pursuit of transverse alliteration often leads the author to choose an inappropriate word or to become tedious in citing superfluous examples simply to illustrate competency with transverse alliteration.

- (5) where "quench" is used inappropriately to produce a forced rhyming with "coole": "...that I can neither quench them wyth the water of free will, neyther coole them wyth wisedome."<sup>5</sup> (page 218)
- (6) where the phrase "of necessitie" seems inserted not to add any meaning to the sentence but rather to aid alliteration: "But thou wylte happely saye, that although there bee many things in Naples to bee iustlye condemned, yet there are some things of necessitie to bee commended..." (page 189)
- (7) where continuous transverse alliteration produces tedious, rambling statements which simply reiterate what has been said: "Heere, yea, heere Euphues, maiste thou see not the carued visarde of a lewde woman, but the incarnate visage of a lasciuious wanton, not the shaddowe of loue, but the substaunce of luste: My hearte melteth in droppes of bloude, to see a harlot

---

<sup>5</sup>Euphues, p. 124.



with the one hande robbe so many cofers, and  
 wyth the other to rippe so many corses...Is it  
 not farre better to abhorre sinnes by the remem-  
braunce of others faultes, then by repentaunce  
 of thine owne follies? Is not hee accompted moste  
wise, whome other mens harmes dooe make moste  
warie?" (page 189)

Apuleius uses transverse alliteration as frequently as  
 Lyly. Examples from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Lucius' description of Fotis entering his  
 bedroom: "...laeta proximat rosa serta et  
rosa soluta in sinu tuberante..." (2.16.72)

In the example above, close transverse alliteration exists, and the alliterative words are exactly parallel. Since both "rosa certa" and "rosa soluta" are in the ablative case, rhyming is produced.

or from the old woman's plea to the judges to save Lucius' life: "...quam latronem istum miserorum pignorum meorum peremptorem cruci affigatis,..." (3.9.112)

This example also illustrates close transverse alliteration; however, Apuleius fails to make the alliterative phrases parallel in structure as well as in initial sounds. Ideally, "peremptorem" would have to be in the genitive case rather than in the accusative case in order to achieve grammatical exactness. The example demonstrates, then, the problems an author encounters when the syntax of the sentence cannot be paralleled to the grammatical device he chooses to use.

- (2) from Psyche's mournful speech to her parents and the townspeople: "Quid lacrimis inefficacibus ora mihi veneranda foedatis? Quid laceratis in vestris oculis mea lumina?" (4.34.196)

In the example above, Apuleius encountered little difficulty in paralleling "Quid", "lacrimis" (ablative), "laceratis" (ablative absolute), "inefficacibus" (ablative), and "in vestris" (ablative). However, "ora" (accusative), "oculis" (ablative), "mihi" (dative), and "mea" (accusative) are not parallel in form as well as in alliterative structure. Nonetheless, Apuleius' effort is commendable in his ability to maintain transverse alliteration throughout two separate statements, even though the alliteration is not exact.

- (3) from Lucius' description of his driver's cruel punishment: "...ut incessu meo commotae incitataeque funestis aculeis infeste me convulnerarent." (7.18.328)

Grammatical exactness in transverse alliteration is maintained since both "inincessu" and "ininfeste" are in the ablative case, and both "cocmmotae" and "coconvulnerarent" are forms of verbs.

- (4) from Apuleius' description of Charite's sorrow: "...et dies totos totasque noctes insumebat lucuoso desiderio, et imagines defuncti,..." (8.7.356)

Transverse alliteration in this sentence is imperfect because different parts of speech are used alliteratively. "Inisumebat" is a verb; whereas, "imaigines" is a noun, and "dedesiderio" is a noun whereas "dedefuncti" is a verb form.

Just as Lyly's use of transverse alliteration often produces awkward or unusual phraseology, so Apuleius' adherence to this grammatical device evokes some problems:

- (5) Apuleius' use of poetical color and transverse alliteration sometimes creates an absurd picture rather than an elegant one: "Commodum punicantibus phaleris Aurora roseum quatiens lacertum caelum inequitabat et me securae quieti revulsum nox diei reddidit." (3.1.100)
- (6) Apuleius sometimes uses new words (or words not found before Apuleius) to maintain transverse alliteration. New words are a problem in that the author may confuse his reader by attracting attention to a singular word. This disruption in the continuity of the story may be particularly detrimental in Metamorphoses since the numerous tales are so diversified. Generally, Apuleius does not insert a new word to exemplify transverse alliteration; however, an example of this process should be considered: "...et discretim remota rite componit, rata scilicet nullius dei fana ac caerimonias negligere se debere..." (6.1.250)
- (7) Apuleius sometimes places an adjective before a noun in order to maintain alliterative structure. Although this practice does not disrupt the continuity or logic of the sentence, it is irregular and should be considered: "...gollititis assentiri velis et declinata morte nobiscum secura periculi vivere,..." (5.18.226)

The examples above demonstrate Lyly's and Apuleius' continuous attempt to use annomination and transverse alliteration. Both authors use alliteration several times in

succession, as if they have only then remembered to use this device. Indeed, Child notes that alliteration in Euphues often appears in groups of three, eight, and even nine<sup>6</sup> - a statement which also applies to the alliteration Apuleius employs. It is not unusual that Apuleius and Lyly do not use transverse alliteration as frequently as they use annomination. Simple alliteration is spontaneous and naturally easier to construct; whereas, transverse alliteration generally calls for the conscious effort of the author.

III. Assonance occurs where there is a likeness of two or more vowel sounds either at the beginning of the words or within the words themselves. Often, assonance occurs within a sentence which uses alliteration, consonance, or other grammatical devices. Unlike annomination and transverse alliteration, the use of assonance is not a problem for either Lyly or Apuleius. This grammatical ploy is usually subtle and does not require the conscious effort of the writer. Thus, when it is used, it does not detract from the context of the sentence. Examples of assonance from Euphues include:

- (1) from the old gentleman's advice to Euphues:  
 "Young gentleman, although my acquaintaunce  
 bee small to intreate you, and my authoritie  
 lesse to commaund you..." (page 187)

The assonance displayed in the above sentence occurs between two parallel words, two nouns following the possessive pronouns "my".

---

<sup>6</sup>Euphues, p. 61.

- (2) from Euphues' vow of love to Lucilla: "Neyther doth hee desire to bee trusted any way, vntill he shall be tried euery way..." (page 219)
- (3) from Lucilla's reply to Euphues' vow of love: "...many strokes ouerthrow the tallest Oke..." (page 225)

Assonance, then, may appear initially as well as internally within one clause or statement.

- (4) from Lucilla's soliloquy concerning the loves of Euphues and Philautus: "And I hope so to behaue my selfe as Euphues shall thinke me his owne, and Philautus perswade himselfe I am none but his." (page 207)

In this example, assonance occurs between two verbs and produces a rhyming effect. Though the verbs are different in form, the structure of the sentence and the rhyming of the verbs signify that assonance is present.

- (5) from Euphues' discourse on the trickery of women: "...so odious, so vgly, so..." (page 255)

Assonance occurs in this series of adverbs and adjectives to emphasize Euphues' point that Philautus should consider women rather "serpents then saynts" (page 255).

Examples of assonance from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Aristomenes' account of Socrates' troubles: "...sordium enormem eluviem operose effrico..." (1.7.12)

The assonance of the "e" sound gives the sentence a rhythm and emphasizes the great amount of filth on Socrates' body.

- (2) from Lucius' adventure with thieves: "...estur  
ac potatur incondite pulmentis acervatim, pani-  
bus aggeratim, poculis agminatim ingestis;..."  
(4.8.154)

Note that the assonance in the example above adds to the sentence's rhyming effect and that the words using assonance are identical in form.

- (3) from Lucius' adventures in Milo's house: "...  
plusculisque ibidem diebus demoratus falsis  
amoribus ancillae Milonis animum irrepens ian-  
uae..." (7.1.300)
- (4) from the accounts of Lucius when he is suspected of being hydrophobic: "...ni respecto subiti  
periculi turbine cubiculum..." (9.2.402)
- (5) from Lucius' thoughts on the beauty of Fotis:  
"...aut in contrariam gratiam variat aspectum..."  
(2.9.62)

In the last two examples above, internal assonance is present in order to produce a rhyming effect.

IV. Consonance occurs when both vowel and consonant sounds are similar. Like annomination and assonance, consonance presents few problems for either Apuleius or Lyly. This grammatical tactic is desirable since it lends itself well to rhyming and to the reiteration of ideas. Examples of consonance from Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Euphues' estimation of Philautus' friendship: "...and pertaker of all thy misfortune  
without mistrust of fleeting, who will accompt  
thy bale his bane, thy mishap his misery..."  
(page 197)

Lyly successfully uses consonance in the above example since each word using consonance has a counterpart identical in form. "Misfortune" and "mistrust" are the objects of prepositions, while "mishap" and "misery" are used as appositives.

- (2) from Lyly's description of Philautus' relationship with Ferardo: "...crepte into credite with Don Ferardo one of the chiefe governours of the citie..." (page 199)

Consonance is used in this sentence not only to produce a rhyme, but also to play on the syllable "cre" as it is used in a noun and verb of different meanings.

- (3) from Philautus' speech to Euphues entreating his friend to reveal his problem: "Therefore my good Euphues, for these doubtes and dompes of mine, either remoue the cause or reueale it." (page 211)

Note that the words used to display consonance are grammatically equal: "doubtes" and "dompes" are objects of the preposition, while "remoue" and "reueale" are verb forms.

- (4) from Euphues' confession of his unrequited love: "Neither can there bee vnder so delicate a hew lodged deceite, neither in so beautifull a mould a malicious minde." (page 213)

Consonance is used in conjunction with annomination in the example above to emphasize two contradictory ideas.

- (5) from Euphues' confession of unrequited love: "I am therefore enforced perforce to challenge that courtesie at thy handes,..." (page 213)

In this example, the juxtaposition of two words displaying consonance produces rhyme and suggests a subtle play on the like sound of two antithetical words.

Examples of consonance from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from the robber's tale: "...clavique subtrahita fores ianuae repandit nobisque prompte convolantibus et domus alveo receptis demonstrat horreum, ubi vespera sagaciter argentum copiosum recondi viderat." (4.18.170)

The "re" sound of the three marked verbs provides unity and continuity in a sentence which might otherwise appear disjointed. The entire sentence contains forty-six words and needs the use of grammatical devices to unite the several ideas presented.

- (2) from the story concerning Apuleius' fate at the hands of the shepherds: "...est enim congruens pessimis conatibus contra noxiam conscientiam sperare securitatem." (7.27.340)

Apuleius' use of consonance in the example above reinforces the mother's opinion that Lucius is culpable for the death of her son.

- (3) from the crowning of Lucius by the great priest: "...mihi coronam et Hercule coronam consequenter..." (11.12.558)
- (4) from Apuleius' description of Psyche's confinement: "Nec mora, cum paulo maturium lectum maritus accubans,..." (5.6.206)

The close position of consonance in this example and the relationship of the letters within "maturius" and "maritus" suggest that Apuleius



strives for a play on word meaning as well as a likeness of sound.

- (5) from the tower's instruction to Psyche concerning her passage through Hell: "...hunc offre-  
natum unius offulae praeda facile praeteribis,  
ad ipsamque protinus Proserpinam introibis,..."  
(6.19.276)

Consonance is used in the example above both to produce a rhyming effect and to provide unity in a long sentence (64 words) which might otherwise appear to be disordered. Note that the words displaying consonance are positioned in pairs and that one word, excluding the necessary preposition "ad", appears between the two words in a pair.

V. An author produces rhyme by using a correspondence of sounds in two or more words, or by using a correspondence of sounds in the end words of clauses or sentences. Though Metamorphoses and Euphues are considered novels, they do contain many more rhyming words and passages than are usually evident in this genre of literature. Thus, the poetic and the prosaic are combined to produce works which please the ear as well as the mind. Considering that the Latin language does have a natural rhythm, one might assume that rhyming passages from Apuleius' work are overwhelming, especially since the work itself consists of eleven books and many different stories. However, Apuleius carefully constructs each passage so that rhyming never dominates any one portion of a story. In this one respect, Apuleius is

the better Euphuist of the two authors. Unlike Lyly, he recognizes the need to insert non-rhythmical words or sentences wherever several rhyming words or sentences fall. This conscientious practice allows the reader to appreciate fully the other grammatical devices Apuleius uses, without becoming lost in an endless recitation of rhyming phrases. Both Lyly's and Apuleius' use of rhyme in conjunction with alliteration and repetition will be discussed after a thorough examination of the grammatical schemes the authors use. Examples of rhyme from Euphues include:

- (1) from Philautus' reply to Euphues' troubled confession: "The eye that blinded thee, shall make thee see, the Scorpion that stung thee shall heale thee..." (page 215)

Though this example of rhyme is imperfect since rhyming is a result of repetition more than a correspondence of similar sounds, the proverbial clause demonstrates well Lyly's use of several grammatical devices within one statement: rhyme, alliteration, and antithesis are all present.

- (2) from Lucilla's soliloquy concerning her feeling of loyalty and love: "Albeit I can no way quench the coales of desire with forgetfulnessse, yet will I rake them vp in the ashes of modestie, seeing I dare not discover my love for maidely shamefastnes, I wil dissemble it til time I haue opportunitie." (page 207)

Note the use of end stopped rhyme, a rhyming derived from the quatrain and familiar to the Renaissance reader. In this example, Lyly

almost achieves perfection in end rhyme since the vowel sounds are similar and accented in "for<sup>g</sup>étfulness" and "shaméfastnes", though they are not accented similarly in "módestie" and "opportúnitie."

- (3) from Lyly's comment on the proper grounds for friendship: "...yet whosoeuer shall see this amitie grounded vpon a little affection, will soone coniecture that it shall be dissolued vpon a light occasion:..." (page 197)

Note that the two rhyming words serve the same grammatical function within the sentence: both "affection" and "occasion" are objects of "vpon".

- (4) from Euphues' soliloquy cursing his own folly: "I will to Athens ther to tosse my bookes, no more in Naples to lyue with faire lookes." (page 241)

In this statement, Lyly exhibits masculine rhyme. The vowel sounds are similar (bookes, lookes), and the rhyme is singular.

- (5) from Lyly's initial discourse concerning the advantages and disadvantages of "wit": "...that witte is the better if it bee the deerer bought; as in the sequele of thys historie shall moste manifestlye appeare." (page 185)

In the example above, Lyly uses internal rhyme, the rhyming of words within the same line, rather than end rhyme.

- (6) from Ferardo's protest against Lucilla's fickle mind: "Nature will not permitte me to disherit my daughter, and yet it will suffer thee to dishonour thy father." (page 244)

Note that Lyly exhibits feminine rhyme in this example. The rhyming of "father" and "daughter" is multiple with the first rhyming syllable accented and the second syllable not accented.

Examples of rhyme from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Lucius' description of the jewels within Byrrhaena's house: "...aurum in gemmis et in tunicis, ibi inflexum, hic intextum,..." (2.2.50)

Like Lyly, Apuleius often uses internal rhyme. In the example above, Apuleius emphasizes Lucius' dismay at the sight of such precious stones by calling the reader's attention to the passage through rhyming.

- (2) from Psyche's profession to the people that she is ready to accept the fate Venus has appointed her: "Ducite me, et cui sors addixit scopulo sistite; festino felices istas nuptias obiree, festino generosum illum maritum meum videree." (4.34.196)

The example above illustrates Apuleius' use of rhyme and alliteration within one statement. Note also that the four rhyming words are all verbs.

- (3) from Lucius' description of the slaves in the baker's mill: "...quam obtecti, non<sup>n</sup>nulli exiguo tegili tantum modo pubem iniecti, cuncti tamen sic tunicati ut essent per pannulos manifesti, frontes litterati et capillum semirasi et pedes annulati..." (9.12.418)

The repetition of the "i" sound in the example above emphasizes the horrible condition of the

baker's slaves. The continuous flow of rhythmic words suggests a vast number of slaves in varying states.

- (4) from Lucius' description of a greyhound's theft: "...adaeque venaticus latenter invaserat, laetusque praeda propere custodientes oculos evaserat." (8.31.396)

Here, Apuleius uses rhyme in conjunction with the antithesis of ideas and sound to stress his point.

- (5) from Lucius' description of the procession of the goddess: "Mulieres candido splendentibus amicis, vario laetantes gestamine, verno florentes coronamine..." (9.9.552-554)

The close rhyming in the example above seems to illustrate the processional parade of people in different regal garment.

Several conclusions may be drawn after considering the various examples of alliteration, annomination, consonance, and rhyme in Metamorphoses and Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. One inescapable conclusion is that the styles of the two authors are similar in both form and purpose. Both Apuleius and Lyly use transverse alliteration, annomination, assonance, consonance, and rhyme to emphasize a point or to emulate a sound which corresponds to the statement they make. Both authors encounter some problems in using alliteration and resort to the use of inappropriate or ambiguous words. Often, this conflict produces a straining for effect where the emphasis is placed on the device used rather than on the logical content of the story. Both authors achieve

grammatical exactness in the form of a word as well as in the alliterative, consonantal, or vowel sound. In addition, they incorporate several grammatical devices within one phrase or statement.

In comparing the two works, the differences between the styles of Apuleius and Lyly have been considered. Undoubtedly, there are variations of style; however, the discrepancies in grammatical usage are primarily due to the varied structure of the Latin and English language. All of the grammatical devices mentioned in this chapter are exhibited by Apuleius and Lyly according to the limitations of their particular linguistic mode. Though much of the English language consists of words derived from Latin, the grammatical construction of words for each of the two languages is unique. Latin encompasses the use of separate cases and declensions for nouns and adjectives, as well as separate conjugations for verb forms. In contrast, English does not change the form of a noun when it changes its part of speech, and the adjective does not take the form of the noun it describes. The Latin language permits a wide variety of word order, whereas English adheres to specific sentence patterns. Considering the differences between the structures of the two languages, one would expect some variation between the styles of Apuleius and Lyly. Regardless of the authors' different purposes in using a literary device or varied degrees to which they employ that device, they both aim at writing prose with

a "fineness and precision of phrase"<sup>7</sup> which is characteristic of Euphuism. Perhaps an examination of the remaining grammatical devices will further prove the Euphuistic nature of both Apuleius' and Lyly's works.

---

<sup>7</sup>Euphues, p. 120.

## CHAPTER IV

### THE DEVELOPMENT OF STYLE IN EUPHUES: THE ANATOMY OF WIT AND METAMORPHOSES - THE USAGE OF THE WORD AS A UNIT

Before reaching any conclusions regarding the Euphuistic elements in Apuleius' work, a thorough examination of the remaining grammatical devices used by both Apuleius and Lyly is necessary. The question now is whether or not both authors employ stylistic techniques which use the word as a unit to convey the grammatical or syntactical importance of a group of words. This categorical division includes the use of: antithesis of ideas and sounds, isocola, pleonasm, repetition, personification, puns, rhetorical questions, and allusions to classical and historical figures. After noting the consistent usage of these devices in Metamorphoses and in Euphues; The Anatomy of Wit, a chart illustrating the frequency with which each technique is employed will be studied.

VI. Antithesis of ideas and sound is the use of a balanced structure for emphasizing comparison and contrast. This structure is shown through the opposition of words and ideas in sentences balanced against each other. Often, two or more of the words used within the sentence are parallel



in both position and grammatical function.<sup>1</sup> Though the extent to which antithesis is developed in any sentence or clause varies, repetition is often a result of these antithetical structures. Indeed, the structural balance of opposing ideas and sounds lends itself to a tedious display of repetitious contrasts in many examples. Both Lyly's and Apuleius' perpetual strain after antithesis sometimes leads the authors into creating artificial comparisons and contrasts which are unsupported by any opposition of sense. Examples from Euphues include:

- (1) from Lucilla's rationalization concerning her love for Euphues: "For as the Bee that gathereth Honny out of the weede, when she espyeth the faire flower flyeth to the sweetest: or as the kynde spanyell though he hunt after Byrdes, yet forsakes them to retryue the Partridge: or as we commonly feede on beefe hungerly at the first, yet seing the Quayle more dayntie, chaunge our dyet: So I, although I loued Philautus for his good properties, yet seing Euphues to excelle him, I ought by Nature to lyke him better: By so muche the more therefore my change is to be excused, by how much the more my choyce is excellent: and by so much the lesse I am to be condemned, by how much the more Euphues is to be commended." (page 206)

The references to the living creatures' preferences for "dayntie" morsels are included to illustrate the redundancy which often occurs in a straining for effect rather than for sense. Obviously, the author attempts to display Lucilla's

---

<sup>1</sup>Euphues, p. 120.

fickle rationalization of her attraction to Euphues, in order that her final declaration of infidelity in the ensuing lines will seem all the more ludicrous. It is in this final declaration that a parallelism of both position and grammatical function is evident. Not only are the prepositional phrases "By so much the lesse" and "by how much the more" antithetically balanced within the sentence, but also the clauses "I am to be condemned" and "Euphues is to be commended." Thus, both antithesis of ideas and sounds occur in the objects of the prepositions and in the infinitives.

- (2) from the old gentleman's advice to Euphues:  
 "Alas Euphues by how much the more I loue the highe climbinge of thy capacitie, by so much the more I feare thy fall..." (page 189)

Again, Lyly uses the repetitious prepositional phrases "by how much the more" and "by so much the more" to balance the opposing ideas of "the highe climbinge" and "thy fall." However, he fails to attain complete opposition of ideas since the subject-verb combinations "I loue" and "I feare" are not antithetical in idea, though they are equal in grammatical function.

- (3) from Euphues' rebuttal of the old gentleman's advice: "Though all men bee made of one mettall, yet they bee not cast all in one moulde, there is framed of the selfe same clay as well the tile to keepe out water as the pottle to containe lycour, the Sunne doth harden the durte & melt the waxe, fire maketh the gold to shine and the straw to smother..." (page 190)

Antithesis of ideas is maintained throughout Lyly's

comparison of the inherent differences among men to the casting of clay. Though each opposing idea is equal in grammatical function to its counterpart, the verb phrases "to keepe out water" - "to containe lycour" and "doth harden the durte" - "melt the waxe" convey the major antithetical elements within the sentence.

- (4) from Euphues' farewell letter to Philautus:  
 "As Lucilla was caught by frawde so shall she be kept by force, and as thou wast too simple to espye my crafte, so I thinke thou wilt be too weake to withstande my courage, but if thy reuenge stande onely vppon thy wish, thou shalt neuer lyue to see my woe, or to haue thy wil, and so farewell." (page 236)

In this example, a parallelism of both the grammatical function and the sound of the words is accomplished. The transverse alliteration of "wast...craft" and "wilt...courage" is used in conjunction with the repetition of the "f" sound in "frawde...force" and of the "w" sound in "woe...wil" to establish the antithetical structure of the sentence.

Lyly's continual strain after antithesis often leads him into the quandary of transparently artificial statements which are unsupported by any opposition of sense:

- (5) when antithesis is not maintained throughout the entire comparison:<sup>2</sup> "Weenest thou that he will haue no mistrust of thy faithfulnessse, when he hath had tryall of thy fycklenesse? Will he haue no doubt of thyne honour, when thou thy selfe

---

<sup>2</sup>Euphues, p. 121.

callest thyne honestie in question?" (page 205)

- (6) when antithesis is unsupported by any opposition of sense and merely leads to the tedious repetition of an idea:<sup>3</sup> "Heere, yea, heere Euphues, maiste thou see not the carued visarde of a lewde woman, but the incarnate visage of a lasciuious wanton, not the shaddowe of loue, but the substaunce of luste:..." (page 189)
- (7) when a straining for antithesis results in a peculiar locution: "...yet doth hee deserue a better then thy selfe, whose corrupt manners haue staynde thy heauenly hewe, whose light behauour hath dimmed the lightes of thy beautie, whose vnconstant mynde hath betrayed the innocencie of so many a Gentleman." (page 240)

Similarly, Apuleius uses antithesis of ideas and sounds for emphasizing comparison or contrast. For example:

- (1) from the tale of Aristomenes: "Istud mendacium tam verum est, quam si quis velit dicere magico susurramine amnes agiles reverti, mare pigrum colligari, ventos inanimes exspirare; solem inhiberi, lunam despumari, stellas evelli, diem tolli, noctem teneri." (1.3.6)

In this example, Apuleius repeatedly uses the passive infinitive to create a rhythmic movement which reiterates the idea that his tale is valid. The use of antithesis in describing the various elements of nature, in conjunction with a rhyme scheme, provides both a contrast in idea and sound within each infinitive phrase.

---

<sup>3</sup>Ibid.

- (2) from Psyche's plea for Ceres' aid in her distress: "...et inluminarum Proserpinae nuptiarum demeacula et luminosarum filiae inventionum re-meacula,..." (6.2.252)

In the example above, Apuleius expertly combines antithesis of ideas and sounds through his use of the opposing images of dark and light.

- (3) from the baker's discovery of his wife's lover: "Non sum barbarus nec agresti morum squalore praeditus, nec ad exemplum naccinae truculentiae sulphuris te letali fumo necabo, ac ne iuris...sed plane cum uxore mea partiario tractabo..." (9.27.442)

An examination of antithesis within Metamorphoses would not be complete without an example of Apuleius' use of negative clauses which precede the conjunction "sed" and an ensuing ironic contrast. In this example, the baker repeatedly states the ominous actions he will not take against the adulterer in order to build his fear before the baker's final declaration of a peaceful, though ironic, solution to the dilemma.

- (4) from the tale of the wicked stepmother: "...quoad illa nuntiorum varietate pollicitationem sibi denegatam manifesto perspicuens, mobilitate lubrica nefarium amorem ad longe deterius trans-tulisset odium..." (10.4.478)

This example is particularly noteworthy in that Adlington's translation of this passage closely parallels the style used by Lyly in the examples of antithesis cited above. Adlington's version of the incident translates: "Then she, in her fickle mood, by how much she wickedly loved him

before, by so much and more she hated him now."  
 (page 479) Perhaps this likeness is simply  
 a chance occurrence; however, supportive evi-  
 dence concerning numerous other similarities  
 between the Euphuistic style present in Metamor-  
phoses and Euphues seems to dictate otherwise.

Like Lyly, Apuleius' perpetual usages of antithesis are  
 sometimes tiresome for the reader and are unsupported by any  
 opposition of sense. For example:

- (5) where a repeated use of antithesis proves te-  
 dious for the reader: "Et divina, potens cae-  
 lum deponere, terram suspendere, fontes durare,  
 montes diluere, manes sublimare, deos infimare,  
 sidera extinguere, Tartarum ipsum illuminare."  
 (1.8.14)

Though Apuleius successfully combines a rhyme  
 scheme, isocola, and antithesis in the above  
 example, the portentous warning is obviously a  
 display of Euphuistic skill in precision of  
 phrase. It is the quantity of such examples in  
Metamorphoses which proves to be tedious. Indeed,  
 after the reader patiently bears the antithetical  
 descriptions of the soceress' abominable powers  
 throughout Chapter 8, he finds a repetitious  
 account of Meroe's past atrocities in Chapter 9.

- (6) where antithesis is not maintained throughout  
 the entire comparison: "Denique flere et vapu-  
 lare et nonnunquam iugulari lucrosum prosperumque  
 proventum nuntiant, contra ridere et mellitis  
 dulciolis ventrem saginare vel in voluptatem Ven-  
 eriam convenire tristitiae animi, languori cor-  
 poris damnisque ceteris anxiatum iri praedicant."  
 (4.27.184)

- (7) again, where exactness in the antithetical com-

parisons fails: "Festinat, differt; audet, trepidat; diffidit, irascitur; et, quod est ultimum, in eodem corpore odit bestiam diligit maritum." (5.20.230)

VII. One ramification of the grammatical devices used in developing Euphuism is the utilization of isocola. Within the construction of antithetical and alliterative statements, phrases and clauses naturally occur which are equal both in the number of syllables and in the syntactical function of the words. In some instances, the development of isocola seems to be a conscious straining for effect; in others, it appears to be uninitiated. Both Lyly and Apuleius use this device to enhance further the quality of their Euphuistic style. Examples of isocola from Euphuus: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from the old gentleman's advice to Euphuus upon his arrival in Naples: "...if they had bene both as good Gardners to keepe their knotte, as they were grafters to brynge foorth such fruite, or as cunninge Painters, as they were happie parentes, no doubt they had sowed Hempe before Wheate, that is discipline before affection, they had set Hisoppe wyth Time, that is manners wyth witte..." (pages 187-8)

Though the comparison of "Gardners" to "grafters," "Painters" to "parentes," and "Hempe" to "discipline" are parallel in form and sound, they fall short of being complete tricola. However, the phrases "Hisoppe wyth Time" and "manners wyth witte" are ideally symmetrical in syntactical form and in the number of syllables. The tricola appear to be used ironically within this sentence

to demonstrate both Euphues' and Lyly's "witte."

- (2) from Euphues' reply to the old gentleman:  
 "...you melancholy, wee zealous in affection,  
 you ielous in all your dooinges, you testie with-  
out cause, wee hastie for no quarrell." (page 193)

Although the antithesis of sense fails in the isocola above, the clauses are ideally balanced.

- (3) from Euphues' discourse concerning love: "...  
 and to waxe pale through theyr owne peeuishnesse,  
 their sutes, their seruice, theyr letters, theyr  
labors, their loues, theyr lyues..." (page 204)

The example above illustrates the impact on both style and meaning which Euphuism can attain when alliteration, rhyme, and isocola are applied within repetitive, curt phrases. Lyly employs a similar technique in the following examples:

- (4) from Lucilla's soliloquy regarding her affections for Euphues: "Then sticke to thy determination, & shew thy selfe, what loue can doe, what loue dares doe, what loue hath done." (page 207)
- (5) from Lyly's narration concerning the old gentleman's understanding of Euphues' folly: "...for hee well knewe that so rare a wytte woulde in tyme eyther breede an intollerable trouble, or bringe an incomperable Treasure to the common weale..." (page 186)

Examples of isocola from Apuleius' Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Aristomenes' tale concerning the malevolent powers of Meroe: "...Et divina, potens caelum deponere, terram suspendere, (fontes durare), montes diluere, manes sublimare, deos infimare..." (1.8.14)



In the above example, Apuleius combines anti-thetical and symmetrical clauses to emphasize further Meroe's contemptible powers and to illustrate a fineness and precision of phrase.

- (2) from Thelyphron's adventures during the festival day of the "deum Risum": "...iniecta manu nasum prehendo, sequitur: aures pertracto, deruunt." (2.30.96)

The two tricola above satirically stress the absurdity of Thelyphron's tale regarding his defence of a corpse.

- (3) from Lucius' account of Fotis' overpowering beauty: "...sic tuis istis micantibus oculis et rubentibus bucculis et (renidentibus crinibus) et hiantibus osculis et fragrantibus papillis..." (3.19.128)

Though the isocola are not maintained throughout the entire description of Fotis' beauty, the repetitive, rhythmical isocola above successfully and satirically depict Lucius' unrequited desires.

- (4) from the description of the wild boar Tlepolemus and Thrasyllus encounter: "...spinae hispidus, dentibus attritu sonaci spumeus, oculis aspectu minaci flammeus..." (8.4.350)

Apuleius employs the isocola in the example above to emphasize the ferocious appearance of the beast. Symmetrical balance is achieved through words equal in both position and sound.

- (5) from Lucius' account of the fearful townspeople who stone his approaching band: "Quas praedas inhiatis? Quae damna vindicatis?" (8.18.374)

This example illustrates the effective use of

rhetorical questions, rhyme, and isocola to stress the victims' plight.

Apuleius frequently uses repetitive, short, symmetrical phrases and clauses to establish a rhythmical movement of isocola. This movement differs from the examples above because the isocola depend on the repetition of a single word. Generally, these isocola are constructed in order to intensify the suspense within the story. Several examples include:

- (6) from Apuleius' tale of Barbarus' unexpected arrival at his home: "Suae domus ianuam iam pulsat, iam clamat, iam saxo, fores verberat..." (9.20.430)
- (7) from the tale concerning the baker's wicked wife: "...eique totum novercae scelus aperuit, de adulterio, de maleficio, et quemadmodum larvatus ad inferos demeasset." (9.31.448)
- (8) from the tale regarding the confrontation between the gardener and the soldier: "...et statim qua pugnis, qua cubitis, qua morsibus, etiam de via..." (9.40.464)

VIII. Pleonasm or diffuseness, is the redundant usage of needless words. Like isocola, this grammatical contrivance often seems to be a subconscious result which occurs in a straining for other grammatical devices, rather than a conscious straining for effect through reiteration. For the purpose of an organized discussion, pleonasm and repetition will be examined as two, separate grammatical usages. The former refers to the reiteration of a single word's meaning;

whereas, the latter encompasses the redundant usage of repetitive phrases or clauses. The primary problem in a consistent application of repetition is that it inevitably becomes a tedious display of redundant ideas and writing skills. However, there are examples where a restrained use of repetition may prove valuable in emphasizing a particular point. Examples of pleonasm from Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Lyly's narration of Euphues' arrival in Naples: "But Nature impatient of comparisons, and as it were disdaining a companion, or co-partner in hir working..." (page 184)
- (2) from Euphues' reply to the old gentleman: "But why go I about to prayse Nature, the whiche as yet was neuer any Impe so wicked & barbarous, any Turke so vile and brutish, any beast so dull and sencelesse, that coulde, or would, or durst disprayse or contemne? Doth not Cicero conclude and allowe, that if wee followe and obey Nature, we shall neuer erre? Doth not Aristotle alleadge and confirme, that Nature frameth or maketh nothing in any poynte rude, vayne, and vnperfect?" (page 192)

In the example above, although Lyly employs a diffuseness of compound verbs to emphasize and solidify the supportive points in Euphues' argument with the old gentleman, the verbs seem to be an unnecessary repetition of an overstated idea. A similar usage of compound verbs occurs in the following example:

- (3) from Lyly's relation of Euphues' wit: "...though the Camomill, the more it is trodden and pressed downe, the more it spreadeth, yet the violet the oftener it is handled and touched, the sooner it withereth and decayeth." (page 196)
- (4) from Lucilla's reply to Euphues' confession of love: "...thou offerest thy selfe a Sacrifice for my securitie, thou proferest mee the whole and onelye souereigntie of thy seruice: Truly I were very cruell and harde hearted if I should not loue thee..." (page 221)

Again, the redundant usage of "onelye" and "harde hearted" seems unwarranted in any attempt to stress Lucilla's anguish.

- (5) from Euphues' soliloquy regarding his experiences in Naples: "I had thought that women had bene as we men, that is true, faithfull, zealous, constant, but I perceiue they be rather woe vnto men, by their falshood, gelousie, inconstancie." (page 241)

Though "falshood, gelousie, inconstancie" are words with distinctly different meanings, Lyly's choice of words in describing the traits of the ideal woman Euphues has imagined are repetitive. In this example, perhaps the repetitious account of adjectives denoting a woman's supposed fidelity stems from the Renaissance concept of courtly love and emphasis on trust. Thus, Lyly consciously satirizes the fickle nature of women as opposed to the constant faith of a gentleman like Euphues.

Examples of pleonasm from Apuleius' Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "...nam quod

habuit dum filium curat aegrotum consumpsit  
atque contrivit omne." (6.16.272)

Like Lyly, Apuleius often uses compound verbs which are parallel in meaning. In this example, both consonance and the diffuseness of the verb "to consume" emphasize Psyche's destined fate at the mercy of the despotic Venus.

- (2) from Lucius' sorrowful remembrance of his human form: "...subiitque me non de nihilo vet  
eris priscaequ doctrinae viros finxisse ac  
pronuntiasse caecam et prorsus exoculatam esse  
Fortunam..." (7.2.300)

In this example, word diffuseness is excellently used to emphasize the cruelty of blind Fortune who is unable to distinguish between "malus boni viri fama gloriatur" and the "innocentissimus contra." (7.2.302)

- (3a) from the tale of Charite and Tlepolemus: "Sed  
officiis inferialibus statim exactis puella  
protinus festinat ad maritum suum demere,..."  
(8.7.354)

Throughout Metamorphoses Apuleius attempts to add suspense to his tales through the insertion of repeated words which qualify time. In fact, Adlington frequently omits the time element by not translating these words because they do appear so often. For example, he translates: "Howbeit, Charite, after the burial of her husband, sought the means to follow him..." (8.7.355) A similar use of pleonasm occurs within the tale of the wicked stepmother. Again, Adlington omits a literal translation of the following words:

- (3b) "...confestim magna cum festinatione..."  
(10.12.492)
- (4) from the sale of Lucius: "...quam per tot regiones iam fugiens effugere vel praecedentibus..." (8.24.384)
- (5) from the description of Charite's despair upon the death of Tlepolemus: "...viventium munia, prorsus in pectore, immo vero penitus in medullis luctu ac maerore carpebat animum..." (8.7.356)

Here, pleonasm is used to emphasize a condition, though it is unnecessary since Apuleius gives a detailed description of Charite's mournful state in preceding lines.

IX. Little critical analysis is needed in an examination of repetition. Though both Lyly and Apuleius may intend for this grammatical device to illustrate their fineness of speech or to reiterate certain ideas, repetition is undoubtedly overused in both authors' works. However, the degree of abuse does vary. Because of the great length of his novel, Apuleius seems almost justified in his use of repetition; whereas, Lyly seems unjustified in incorporating repetition into every passage of his short novel. Separate examples for the repetition of sense and form will be given, though necessarily, the two are often present in one instance. Examples of the repetition of sense in Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Lyly's description of the friendship between Euphues and Philautus: "Their friendship augmented every day, insomuch y<sup>t</sup> the one could

not refraine y<sup>e</sup> company of y<sup>e</sup> other one minute,  
all things went in cōmon between them, which all  
men accompted cōmendable." (page 199)

- (2) from Lucilla's soliloquy regarding her attraction to Euphues: "Is not the Dyamonde of more valewe then the Rubie, bicause he is of more verture? Is not the Emeraulde preferred before the Saphyre for his wonderfull propertie? Is not Euphues more prayse worthy then Philautus being more wittie?" (page 206)

- (3) from Lucilla's reply to Euphues' overtures of affection: "The Spider weaueth a fine webbe to hang the Fly, the Wolfe weareth a faire face to deuoure the Lambe, the Merlin striketh at the Partridge, the Eagle often snappeth at the Fly, men are alwayes laying baytes for women, which are the weaker vessells...." (page 223)

Examples of the repetition of form include:

- (4) a repetition of rhetorical questions from Lucilla's soliloquy: "dyddest not thou condemne them of weakenesse? what sounder argument can he haue against thee, then thine owne answer? what better prooffe, then thine owne speach? what greater tryall, then thyne owne talke?" (page 206)
- (5) a repetition of antithesis from Ferardo's advice to Lucilla: "If hee bee base thy bloude wyll make hym noble, if beggerlye thy goodes shall make hym wealthy, if a straunger thy freedome may enfraunchise hym: if hee bee younge he is the more fitter to be thy pheare, if he be olde the lyker to thine aged Father." (page 230)

- (6) a repetition of classical allusions from Lyly's description of Euphues' wit: "Venus had hir Mole in hir cheeke which made hir more amiable: Helen hir scarre on hir chinne which Paris called Cos amoris, the Whetstone of loue. Aristippus his wart, Lycurgus his wenne..." (page 184)

Examples of the repetition of sense from Apuleius'

Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Lucius' description of Fotis' beautiful hair: "...et contra solis aciem vegetus fulgurat vel placidus renitet, aut in contrariam gratiam variat aspectum, et nunc aurum coruscans in lenem mellis deprimitur umbram..." (2.9.62)
- (2) from the tale of the cruel stepmother: "...quod si vere peremptus est, si morte praeuentus est, quaeratis licet causas mortis eius alias." (10.11.492)
- (3) from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "Sed dum meridies solis sedaverit vaporem et pecua spiritus fluvialis serenitate conquieverint..." (6.12.266)

Examples of the repetition of form include:

- (4) the repetition of rhetorical questions and answers from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "...nam et 'Discede,' et 'Quid facis? Vide,' et 'Quid agis? Cave,' et 'Fuge,' et 'Peribis' subinde clamant." (6.14.270)
- (5) the repetition of infinitive phrases and of the adverbs "tunc" and "iam" from Psyche's reaction to her parents' weeping: "...tunc dolere, tunc



flere, tunc me iam quasi peremptam lugere debu-  
istis: iam sentio, iam video solo me nomine  
Veneris perisse." (4.34.196)

- (6) the repetition of modified nouns from the tale  
of Thrasyllus and Charite in the nuptial cham-  
ber: "'En' inquit 'Fidus coniugis mei comes,  
en venator egregius, en carus maritus.'" (8.12.  
362)

X. Personification, the grammatical scheme which gives personality or life to inanimate objects or ideas, is one of the least used grammatical devices in both Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit and Metamorphoses. Undoubtedly, personification is not used extensively because it places strict limitations on a particular sentence or idea. Personification often proves useful in making comparisons; however, it may be detrimental to the meaning of a sentence if it is applied improperly or at random. Though Lyly and Apuleius sometimes effectively use personification in order to enhance a particular idea or comparison, this grammatical device often seems artificial because it is employed in conjunction with a series of other Euphuistic devices. Examples of personification from Euphues include:

- (1) from Lyly's introductory description of Euphues' wit: "But Nature impatient of comparisons, and as it were disdaining a companion, or copartner in hir working, added to this comlinessse of his body suche a sharpe capacitie of minde, that not onely shee proued Fortune counterfaite, but was halfe of that opinion that she hir selfe was onely currant." (page 184)

The example above illustrates excellently the use of personification in conjunction with pleonasm, consonance, transverse alliteration, and antithesis. Personification itself seems artificial because it proves to be redundant in subsequent sentences. Indeed, even the least attentive reader is well aware that Euphues' tragic flaw is his wit. Rather than state this idea in a short, forceful sentence, Lyly loses the impact of his description because he becomes so intent on developing style, that the content is forgotten. For example, he relates: "As therefore the sweetest Rose hath his prickel, the finest veluet his brack, the fairest flowere his bran, so the sharpest witte hath his wanton will, and the holiest heade his wicked waye." (page 184)

- (2) from Euphues' reply to the old gentleman: "Though all men bee made of one mettall, yet they bee not cast all in one moulde, there is framed of the selfe same clay as well the tile to keepe out water as the pottle to containe lycour, the Sunne doth harden the durte & melt the waxe, fire maketh the gold to shine and the straw to smother..." (page 190)

Again, personification may effectively demonstrate Euphues' belief in a man's individuality; however, the device appears artificial and strained because it is used to express an overstated idea. A similar situation occurs below:

- (3) from Euphues' vow of loyalty to Lucilla: "I finde it nowe for a settled truth, which earst I accompted for a vaine talke, that the Purple dye will neuer staine, that the pure Cyuet will neuer loose his sauour, that the greene Laurell

will neuer chaunge his coulour,..." (page 226)

- (4) from Euphues' witty reply to Lucilla's curtness:  
 "...I hope you will the better esteeme of the shadowe, and by so much the lesse it ought to be offenciue, by how much the lesse it is able to offende you, and by so much the more you ought to lyke it, by how much the more you vse to lye in it." (page 201)

Though the phrases "by so much" and "by how much" are redundant, Lyly achieves a certain freshness in wit by personifying the "shadowe" (Euphues) Lucilla scorns.

- (5) from Lucilla's soliloquy regarding her confused state of mind: "Is not the Dyamonde of more valewe then the Rubie, bicause he is of more vertue? Is not the Emeraulde preferred before the Saphyre for his wonderfull propertie?" (page 206)

Both personification and rhetorical questions seem to be used redundantly in this passage to display Lyly's talent in employing Euphuism rather than to express Lucilla's ultimate choice of a lover.

Examples of personification from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from the address of the Priest of Isis to Lucius:  
 "'Multis et variis exanclatis laboribus magnisque Fortunae tempestatibus et...Sed utcumque Fortunae caecitas, dum te pessimis periculis discruciat,..." (11.15.562)

Apuleius aptly combines personification and antithesis in this example to illustrate the termination of Lucius' evil fortune and the beginning of his newly found felicity in religion. Nonethe-

less, personification does seem strained since it is used in conjunction with the priest's repeated antithetical statements and rhetorical questions.

- (2) from Apuleius' description of dawn: "Commodum punicae phaleris Aurora roseum quatens lacertum caelum inequitabat et me securae quieti revulsum nox diei reddidit." (3.1.100)

Personification and poetical color are used in this example to create an almost ludicrous depiction of Aurora lifting "her rosy arm" (3.1.101). A similar instance occurs below:

- (3) from Apuleius' description of the procession of the goddess: "...ut pecua etiam cuiuscemodi et totas domos et ipsum diem serena facie gaudere sentirem. Nam et pruina pridiana dies apricus ac placidus repente fuerat insecutus,... Quid quod arbores etiam, quae pomifera subole fecundae quaeque earum tantum umbram contentae steriles, austrinis laxatae flatibus,..." (11.7.550)

- (4) from Apuleius' description of Lucius' trial for murder: "Omnis cunctatio, ignavia omnis facessat e pectore; stricto mucrone per totam domum caedes ambulet:..." (3.5.108)

In the example above, Apuleius expertly uses the personification of murder to illustrate the cruelty of the three robbers. Because this personification is not impeded by an excessive usage of other grammatical devices, it retains its effectiveness within the sentence. Apuleius uses personification in a similar manner below:

- (5) from Aristomenes' account of the murder of Socrates:

"Heus tu' inquit 'Spongia, cave in mari nata  
per fluvium transeas.'" (1.13.24)

XI. Both Apuleius and Lyly use puns, plays on words that sound alike usually for the sake of humor, in order to demonstrate their ability to manipulate their respective languages. Like personification, this grammatical contrivance occurs infrequently because it places certain limitations on a sentence or idea. In fact, it occurs much less frequently in Apuleius' Metamorphoses than it does in Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit.<sup>4</sup> This variance in frequency may be attributed to the phonetic limitations of the two languages. Though sometimes the authors' attempt to play on a word's meaning fails to achieve any degree of humor or sense, the vast majority of puns are effective in enhancing the humor or importance of an idea. In general, the examples below need little explanation since the puns are easily recognizable. Examples of puns from Lyly's novel include:

- (1) from Euphues' reply to the old gentleman:  
"Who so seuere as the Stoyckes, which lyke Stockes were moued with no melody?" (page 190)
- (2) from Philautus' vow of friendship to Euphues:  
"And verily I am bolde to presume vpon your curtesie, since you your self haue vsed so little curiositie,..." (page 198)

---

<sup>4</sup>This variance in frequency is not disturbing since puns are not an important element of Euphuism. Since they are not abused by Lyly, they are not evidence of his straining after effect.

- (3) from Euphues' discourse concerning his unrequited love: "Ah well I perceiue that loue is not vnlyke the Figge tree, whose fruite is sweete, whose roote is more bitter then the claw of a Bitter..." (page 208)

Unlike the first two examples above, this pun does not occur between words which are syntactically equal in the function they serve in the sentence, since "bitter" is used both as an adjective and as a noun. A similar situation occurs with the use of "chaunge" in the following example: "The gentlewomen were strooke into such a quandarie with this sodayne chaunge, that they all chaunged coulour." (page 204-5)

- (4) from Lucilla's declaration of love for Euphues: "It is not his great mannors, but thy good manners, that shall make my marriage." (page 225)
- (5) from Ferardo's attempt to reconcile Lucilla to Philautus' love: "Lucilla thy coulour sheweth thee to be in a greate choler, and thy hot woords bewray thy heauy wrath..." (page 229)

Examples of puns from Apuleius' Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from Aristomenes' tale: "qui voluptatem veneriam et scortum scorteum Lari et liberis praetulisti..." (1.8.14)

In the example above, Apuleius effectively combines annomination and a pun in order to emphasize Aristomenes' description of the iniquitous Meroe. These two grammatical devices are similarly combined in the following example:

- (2) from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "...accepturus indicivae nomine ab ipsa Venere septem sa-  
via suavia..." (6.8.260)

- (3) from the description of Charite's sorrow:  
"Sed aegre manibus erepta suorum invita reman-  
sit in vita..." (8.6.354)
- (4) from the tale of Lucius and the damsel: "Superi,  
tandem meis supremis periculis opem facite..."  
(6.28.290)

In the example above, Apuleius appears to mock subtly the "Superi" by giving the word "supremis" a negative connotation. Indeed, the damsel prays for the gods to deliver her from these greatest (or worst) dangers. Since both "superus" and "supremus" are identical in meaning (the former is comparative and the latter superlative), Apuleius seems to state that the damsel seeks help from the gods against the gods' dangers. Such an ironic statement is in keeping with Roman philosophy since the Romans believed that the gods' wrath was directly related to the persecution they endured.<sup>5</sup>

- (5) from the tale of Lucius' encounter with the thieves: "Tunc horreum quoddam satis validis claustris obsaepum obseratumque..." (3.28.140)

XII. An analysis of rhetorical questions needs little introduction, since this grammatical device has been examined briefly in conjunction with repetition, alliteration, and antithesis. A rhetorical question is a question to which no answer is expected or which implies its own answer. Generally, Lyly and Apuleius use rhetorical questions in rapid succession in order to emphasize the question asked and to

---

<sup>5</sup>R.M. Ogilvie, The Romans And Their Gods (London: Chatto & Windus Ltd., 1969), pp. 9-23.

intensify the effects of alliterative and antithetical statements. Necessarily, repetition is a result of a series of rhetorical questions, and it often proves to be a tedious display of Euphuistic wit since it fails to contribute significantly to the author's thematic purpose. Again, it is the usage of several, different grammatical devices at one time which sometimes proves burdensome to the reader, rather than the usage of a single technique. Examples of rhetorical questions from Euphues include:

- (1) from Euphues' strategic speech to the old gentleman: "Doe you not knowe that which all men doe affirme and knowe, that blacke will take no other coulour? That the stone Abeston being once made hotte will neuer be made colde? That fire cannot be forced downewarde? That Nature will haue course after kinde? That euery...to Nature? Can the Aethiope chaunge or alter his skinne?" (page 191)

Lyly uses rhetorical questions in this passage to stress Euphues' witty psychological approach to the old gentleman's questions. Rather than simply disagree with the old man's comment that parents are responsible for their children's lives, Euphues enters into a lengthy, superfluous argument that nature dictates a person's life.

- (2) from Euphues' soliloquy regarding the prospects of friendship with Philautus: "Is ther any thing in the world to be reputed (I will not say compared) to friendship? Can any treasure in this transitorie pilgrimage, be of more valewe then



a friende?...Haue I not also learned that one shoulde eate a bushell of salt with him, whom he meaneth to make his friend? that tryall maketh trust?" (page 197)

In the example above, rhetorical questions ironically and subtly foreshadow the result of Euphues' friendship with Philautus. Indeed, through a series of rhetorical questions, Euphues first convinces himself that he will "haue Philautus for my pheere" and then that he will make himself "sure to haue Philautus" (page 197), long before he approaches Philautus regarding the relationship. Thus, the reader anticipates Euphues' breach of loyalty with his advantageous friend prior to Euphues' courting of Lucilla's affections. A similar instance occurs when Euphues gives a well-rehearsed and satirical discourse on love to the eager Lucilla (whom he has met only moments before):

- (3) "Contrarywise if we respect more the outward shape, then the inwarde habit, good God into how many mischiefes doe we fall? into what blyndnesse are we ledde? Doe we not commonly see that in paynted pottes is hidden the deadliest poyson? that in the greenest grasse is the greatest Serpent?" (page 202)

With characteristic sarcasm and a combination of antithesis, annomination, and rhetorical questions, Euphues foretells the "blyndenness" into which ultimately both he and Lucilla are led. Though the abundance of grammatical devices present in Euphues' discourse may be tiresome for the reader, one must praise Lyly's ability to humorously satirize the often unattainable con-

cepts of Renaissance courtly love.

- (4) from Lucilla's discourse concerning her love for Euphues: "Ah fonde wench, doste thou thincke Euphues will deeme thee constant to him, when thou hast bene vnconstant to his friende? Weenest thou that he will haue no mistrust of thy faithfulnessse, when he hath had tryall of thy fycklenesse? Will he haue no doubt of thyne honour, when thou thy selfe callest thyne honestie in question?" (page 205)

Again, Lyly uses alliteration, antithesis, and annomination to emphasize both his precision of phrase and the ironic theme behind the rhetorical questions.

An examination of rhetorical questions would not be complete without one example of Lyly's opposing arguments with "Ay (I), but."

- (5) from Philautus' discovery of Euphues' treachery: "Ah most dissembling wretch Euphues, O counterfayte companion, couldest thou vnder the shewe of a stedfast friende cloake the mallice of a mortall foe? vnder the coulour of simplicitie shrowd the Image of deceit? Is thy Liuia tourned to my Lucilla,...I, but Euphues gaue the onset, I, but Lucilla gaue the occasion, I, but Euphues first brake his minde, I, but Lucilla first bewrayed hir meaning." (pages 232-3)

Examples of rhetorical questions from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from the tale of Aristomenes: "'Mi Socrates, quid istud? Quae facies? Quod flagitium? At vero domi tuae iam defletus et conclamatus es ..." (1.6.10)

In this example, Apuleius uses redundant rhetorical questions to stress Socrates' hideous appearance. Moreover, the author uses "At vero" in his opposing argument which is precisely the same technique Lyly employs. A similar example of the "Ay, but" method occurs later in the same tale: "Ubi vulnus? Spongia ubi? Ubi postremum cicatrix tam alta, tam recens?" et ad illum 'Ne' inquam 'Immerito medici fidi cibo..." (1.18.30)

- (2) from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "Quid infelicem senectam fletu diutino cruciatis? Quid spiritum vestrum, qui magis meus est, crebris eiulatibus fatigatis?...Quid differo? Quid detrecto venientem qui totius orbis exitio natus est?" (4.34.196)

Within this passage, Apuleius combines rhetorical questions, alliteration, and antithesis both to stress Psyche's sorrowful plight and to demonstrate his ability to manipulate several Euphuistic devices at one time.

- (3) from the tale of Cupid and Psyche: "Iam quae possunt alia meis aerumnis temptari vel adhiberi subsidia, cui nec dearum quidem quamquam volentium potuerunt prodesse suffragia? Quorum itaque tantis laqueis...oculos effugiam? Quin igitur masculum tandem sumis animum...eius mitigas? Qui scias an etiam, quem diu quaeritas, illuc in domo matris repperias?" (6.5.256)

Like Lyly, Apuleius often uses rhetorical questions to depict his characters' rationalization process. Just as Euphues and Lucilla recite soliloquies in which they convince themselves they ought to love each other, so Psyche rationalizes

lizes that she ought to take a "masculum animum" and seek the help of Venus.

- (4) from the tale of Charite and Tlepolemus: "Quidni, cum flamma saevi amoris parva quidem primo vapore delectet, sed fomentis consuetudinis exaestuans immodicis ardoribus totos amburat homines?" (8.2.346)

The rhetorical question above excellently summarizes the Renaissance concept of love which pervades throughout Lyly's work. Indeed, both Apuleius and Lyly depict the unrequited desires of their characters when they describe Thrasyllus, who is consumed by the "flamma saevi amoris," and Lucilla, who "began to frie in the flames of loue" (page 205). A similar example occurs when a physician examines the love-sick step-mother in Metamorphoses:

- (5) "Quid venae pulsus, quid caloris intemperantia, quid fatigatus anhelitus et utrimquesecus iactatae crebriter laterum mutuae vicissitudines? Dii boni! Quam facilis licet non artificum medico, cuius tamen docto Veneriae cupidinis comprehensio, cum videas aliquem sine corporis calore flagrantem." (10.2.474-6)

XIII. Like many other Renaissance and classical authors, Lyly and Apuleius relied on allusions to classical and historical personages to illustrate a particular idea. However, their works are unique in that they use these allusions to aid their Euphuistic styles. Thus, sometimes the allusions are introduced for mere display rather than to communicate any substantial idea. Since they are undoubtedly a signifi-

cant part of Euphuism, several examples from each author's work will be discussed. Examples of allusions to classical and historical personages from John Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit include:

- (1) from Lyly's account of Euphues' immoderate wit (vice): "Venus had hir Mole in hir cheeke which made hir more amiable: Helen hir scarre on hir chinne which Paris called Cos amoris, the Whetstone of loue. Aristippus his wart, Lycurgus his wenne: So likewise in the disposition of y<sup>e</sup> minde, either vertue is ouershadowed with some vice, or vice ouercast with some vertue." (page 184)

In this example, Lyly combines one authentic comparison with several imaginary ones. Though I find references to Venus' "Mole", like Bond, I am unable to find any documentation which even remotely refers to a "scarre" on Helen's chin or to "Aristippus his wart, Lycurgus his wenne."<sup>6</sup> Lyly appears to combine these allusions in order to support the antithetical statement concerning the presence of vice and virtue in Euphues. Although this grammatical device is often useful, it becomes tedious in this passage as Lyly continues to display his own wit by citing even further instances of vice in opposition to virtue (i.e. Alexander, Tullius, Solomon, and David).

- (2) from Lyly's account of Euphues' wit: "I can carous with Alexander, abstaine with Romulus, eate with the Epicure, fast with the Stoyck, sleepe with Endimion, watch with Chrisippus,..." (page 186)

---

<sup>6</sup>Euphues, I, p. 131.

Though the historical references are appropriately used in this example, Lyly is obviously displaying his own "pregnaunt wytte" (page 186) by listing superfluous examples of Euphues' newly found popularity in Naples.

- (3) from the old gentleman's advice to Euphues: "The Lacedemonians were wont to shewe their children dronken men and other wicked men, that by seeing theire filth they might shunne the lyke faulte, and auoyde suche vices when they were at the lyke state. The Persians to make theire youth abhorre gluttonie woulde paint an Epicure sleeping with meate in his mouthe..." (page 188)

Again, Lyly cites excessive examples of parental guidance in order to solidify the old man's argument and to illustrate his own knowledge of historical events. Although the instance which describes the customs of the Lacedaemonians is supported in Plutarch's Life of Lycurgus (c. 28), there is no evidence supporting Lyly's depiction of the Persians.<sup>7</sup>

- (4) from Euphues' reply to the old gentleman: "Aristippus a Philosopher, yet who more courtely? Dio-genes a Philosopher, yet who more carterly? Who more popular then Plato, retayning alwayes good company? Who more enuious then Tymon, denouncing all humain societie?..." (page 190)

In his rebuttal to the old gentleman's argument, Euphues strings together a series of redundant rhetorical questions which again display his skill with and knowledge of historical figures.

---

<sup>7</sup>Ibid., p. 131.

- (5) from Euphues' soliloquy concerning his unrequited love: "Hadde Tarquinius vsed his loue with coulours of continuaunce, Lucretia woulde eyther wyth some pitie haue aunswered hys desyre, or with some perswasion haue stayed hir death...Penelope no lesse constaunt then shee, yet more wyse, woulde bee wearie to unweaue that in the nyght, shee spunne in the daye..." (page 211)

In this example, Lyly excellently uses mythological allusions to satirize the psychology behind Euphues' concept of Renaissance love. Remembering Sextus Tarquinius' seduction of Lucretia, Euphues rationalizes that he is justified in seducing Lucilla.

Before discussing classical allusions in Metamorphoses, some distinction should be made between allusions and parables. Throughout his tales, Apuleius uses historical and mythological figures as the central characters of his stories. (Socrates, Endymion, Ganymede, Venus, Cupid, and Psyche are but a few of the many personages used in this manner.) However, in discussing Apuleius' usage of Euphuism, true allusions to such figures, rather than fabricated tales involving those figures, will prove most beneficial in comparing Euphues and Metamorphoses. Examples of classical and historical allusions from Metamorphoses include:

- (1) from the tale of Aristomenes: "Illud horae meministi me terra dehiscente ima Tartara inque his canem Cerberum prorsus esurientem mei prospexisse..." (1.15.26)

Like Lyly, Apuleius often uses mythological allusions to illustrate a particular feeling; for example, Aristomenes compares his encounter with Meroe to a meeting with the threatening Cerberus. However, Apuleius' allusion retains its impact on the reader because it is not overstated. Though both Metamorphoses and Euphues contain approximately the same number of these allusions, the redundancy of these devices is not present in Metamorphoses. Again, however, one must remember that many of the central characters of Apuleius' tale represent classical and historical figures.

- (2) from Lucius' experience with Fotis: "...Veneris hortator et armiger Liber advenit ultro...Hac enim sitarchia navigium Veneris indiget sola..." (2.11.64-66)
- (3) from the tale of the walking winebags: "...audacter mucrone destricto in insani modum Aiacis armatus, non ut ille vivis pecoribus infestus tota laniavit armenta..." (3.18.126)

Apuleius ludicrously compares Lucius' murder of the winebags to Ajax's slaughter of the "vivis pecoribus." Again, the illusion retains its humor precisely because it is not repeatedly stated. Even when Apuleius alludes to several mythological tales at one time in the next chapter, he manages to preserve a freshness in both humor and force. (A freshness Lyly fails to capture in his repetitive allusions.) Thus, Apuleius does not seem to use allusions simply to display a knowledge of history or mythology. For example, he relates:



- (4) "Mihi primam istam virtutis adorem ad exemplum duodeni laboris Herculei numerare, vel trigemino corpori Geryonis vel triplici formae Cerberi, totidem peremptos utres coaequando." (3.19.128)
- (5) from Lucius' vow of loyalty to Fotis: "Ut ego quamvis ipsius aquilae sublimis volatibus toto caelo pervius et supremi Iovis certus nuntius vel laetus armiger..." (3.23.132)

Like Lyly's sportive depiction of Euphues' rationalization of seduction, Apuleius satirically illustrates Lucius' attempt to convince Fotis that he would rather have her than serve as the messenger of Jupiter.

## CONCLUSION

Assuredly, there are numerous similarities between the Euphuistic styles of Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit and Metamorphoses. Though Apuleius and Lyly may have different purposes in using a literary device or may employ that device in varying degrees, they both seek an elaboration of style which is characteristic of Euphuism. Thus, Euphuism can no longer be classified as an "outcome of the Renaissance" or as a "general result of the revived study of the classics."<sup>1</sup> Certainly, many elements present in the Euphuistic style exhibited by Apuleius and Lyly are present also in the works of the Asianic orators. However, one must recognize also that Euphuism is not merely a new name for the Gorgian, Isocratean, or Ciceronean styles. A "Euphuistic" style must contain the grammatical devices used by Lyly with a great deal of frequency and with a conscious straining for effect. In this respect, the writing style of Apuleius' Metamorphoses is remarkably similar to the style of Lyly's Euphues: The Anatomy of Wit. Having carefully examined the stylistic

---

<sup>1</sup>Euphues, I, p. 135.

similarities between the two authors' writings, one must conclude that Metamorphoses is the first example of "Euphuism," though Lyly's contribution to this style is surely significant. Considering the availability of Adlington's translation of Metamorphoses in 1566 and considering Lyly's own knowledge of the Latin language, perhaps we are not hasty in assuming that Lyly may be more stylistically indebted to Apuleius' work than scholars have previously assumed.

Conclusions Drawn from Frequency Charts

<u>Metamorphoses</u>	<u>Euphuies</u>
<hr/>	
I. Alliteration: Transverse	
377 exs.	331 exs.
<hr/>	
II. Annomination	
695 exs.	803 exs.
Three most commonly used letters:	
P - 177	F - 113
C - 148	S - 112
S - 122	C - 89
<hr/>	
III. Antithesis	
325 exs.	379 exs.
<hr/>	
IV. Assonance	
183 exs.	35 exs.
<hr/>	

Metamorphoses	Euphues
<hr/>	
V. Classical/Historical Allusions	
Number of separate allusions:	
84 exs.	95 exs.
Total number of allusions:	
143 exs.	146 exs.
Allusions common to both works:	
Paris	Cupid Venus
Apollo	Ajax
Medea	Jupiter
Ulysses	Juno
Calypso	Homer
Diana	Pasiphae
<hr/>	
VI. Consonance	
283 exs.	198 exs.
87 different combinations	82 different comb.
Four most commonly used combinations:	
co - 32	de - 17
re - 18	re - 14
con - 13	con - 13
de - 12	co - 11
<hr/>	
VII. Isocola	
75 exs.	145 exs.
<hr/>	
VIII. Personification	
16 exs.	30 exs.
<hr/>	
IX. Pleonasm	
87 exs.	19 exs.
<hr/>	

Metamorphoses	Euphues
X. Puns	
12 exs.	56 exs.
XI. Repetition (of sense)	
127 exs.	250 exs.
XII. Rhetorical Questions	
66 different series 117 separate questions	79 different series 270 separate ques.
XIII. Rhyme	
166 exs.	157 exs.

CHAPTER V

A COMPLETE LISTING OF SELECTED GRAMMATICAL DEVICES IN

EUPHUES: THE ANATOMY OF WIT

## Frequency Chart

## A Complete Listing of Selected Grammatical Devices in

Euphues: The Anatomy of WitI. Alliteration: Transverse

1. "...added to this comlinesse of his body suche a sharpe capacitie of minde,..." (p. 184)
2. "...the finest veluet his brack, the fairest flowre his bran,..." (p. 184)
3. "...rather a liking euery way to the eyes, then a loathing any waye to the minde." (p. 184)
4. "...of more wit then wealth, and yet of more wealth then wisdome,..." (p. 184)
5. "...either vertue is ouershadowed with some vice, or vice ouercast with some vertue." (p. 184)
6. "...none more wittie then Euphues, yet at the first none more wicked." (p. 184)
7. "...disdayning counsayle, leauinge his countray, loathing his olde acquaintance,..." (p. 185)
8. "...y<sup>t</sup> the son being left rich by his fathers Will, become retchles by his owne will." (p. 185)
9. "...to bee the Tabernacle of Venus, then the Temple of Vesta..." (p. 185)
10. "...for a gracelesse louer then for a godly lyuer:..." (p. 185)
11. "...soake hys purse to reape commoditie, or sooth hys person to wyne credite,..." (p. 186)
12. "...as well Damocles to betraye hym, as Damon to bee true to hym:..." (p. 186)
13. "...eyther breede an intollerable trouble, or bringe an incomperable Treasure..." (p. 186)
14. "...were too foolishe in vsing no discipline, or thou too frowarde in reiecting their doctrine,..." (p. 187)
15. "...eyther they willinge to haue thee idle, or thou wylfull to bee ill employed." (p. 187)
16. "...his Claye when it is softe, and the Sparrowe is taught to come when..." (p. 187)
17. "If therefore thy Father had bene as wise an husbandman, as hee was a fortunate husbande,..." (p. 187)
18. "...or thy mother as good a huswyfe as shee was a happye wyfe,..." (p. 187)
19. "Yet the remembraunce of thy former follies might breede in thee a remorse of conscience, and bee a remedy against further concupiscence." (p. 188)
20. "...that by seeinge theire filth they might shunne the lyke faulde,..." (p. 188)

21. "...hauing one hande on hys pocket as notinge their thefte, and holdinge a knyfe in the other hande to cutte hys throate:..." (p. 188)
22. "...then my good Euphues consider their plight, and beware of thyne owne perill." (p. 188)
23. "...thou secure doubtinge no mishappe, I sorrowful dreadinge this misfortune." (p. 188)
24. "...wyth sinne in their heartes, and wyth shame in their houses." (p. 188)
25. "...see not the carued visarde of a lewde woman, but the incarnate visage of a lasciuious wanton,..." (p. 189)
26. "...not the shaddowe of loue, but the substaunce of luste:..." (p. 189)
27. "...one hande robbe so many cofers, and wyth the other to rippe so many corses." (p. 189)
28. "...by the remembraunce of others faultes, then by repentaunce of thine owne follies?" (p. 189)
29. "...moste wise, whom other mens harmes dooe make most warie?" (p. 189)
30. "...in Naples to bee iustlye condemned, yet there are some thinges of necessitie to bee commended,..." (p. 189)
31. "...and as thy will doeth leane vnto the one, so thy wytte woulde also embrace the other." (p. 189)
32. "...doth most ryfest infect the cleerest complection, and the Caterpillar cleaueth vnto the ripest fruite,..." (p. 189)
33. "...wylte bee enamoured, if thou haunte their houses and places, ...enchanted." (p. 189)
34. "...vse pastime as the worde importeth, to passe the tyme in..." (p. 190)
35. "...so suspitious to mistrust your good will, nor so sottishe to mislike your..." (p. 190)
36. "...I meane not to cauill wyth you as one louinge sophistrye, neyther to controwle you as one hauing superioritie,..." (p. 190)
37. "...not vppon what probabilyties, but sure I am vppon no prooffe,..." (p. 190)
38. "Aristippus a Philosopher, yet who more courtely? Diogenes a Philosopher, yet who more carterly?" (p. 190)
39. "...you seeme to loue my nature, & loath my nurture,..." (p. 190)
40. "...as you haue ensamples to confirme your pretēce, so I haue most euident...for my purpose:..." (p. 190)
41. "...though the Fawlcon be reclaimed to y<sup>e</sup> fist she retyreth to hir haggardness,..." (p. 191)
42. "...education can haue no shew, where the excellencie of nature doth beare sway." (p. 191)
43. "...to confirme the force of Nature, and confute these your wayne and false forgeries,..." (p. 191)
44. "...they breede more sorrowe and care, then solace and com-



forte,..." (p. 192)

45. "...that Naples is a canckred storehouse of all strife, a common stewes for all strumpettes,..." (p. 193)
46. "...that all y<sup>t</sup> are woed of loue, should be wedded to lust,..." (p. 193)
47. "...be enticed to follye, and beeing enticed, of force shall be entangled?" (p. 193)
48. "...too simple to rayse the siege of pollycie, or too weake to resist the assault by prowesse,..." (p. 193)
49. "But as to the stomacke quatted with daynties, all delycates seeme quesie,..." (p. 194)
50. "...and hauinge taken a surfet of delyght, seeme now to sauor it with despight." (p. 194)
51. "...if you haue taken lyttle pleasure in my reply, sure I am that by your counsaile I haue reaped lesse profit." (p. 194)
52. "But this I note, that for the most part they stande so on their pantuffles, that they be secure of perills,..." (p. 196)
53. "...olde acquaintaunce without cause, and to condempne them without colour:..." (p. 196)
54. "...either more noble, or more necessary, then friendship." (p. 197)
55. "...in whose bosome thou maist sleepe secure without feare, whom thou maist make partner of all thy secrets without suspition of fraude,..." (p. 197)
56. "...partner of all thy secrets without suspition of fraude, and pertaker of all thy misfortune without mistrust of fleeting, ..." (p. 197)
57. "Although there bee none so ignoraunt that doth not know, neither any so impudent that will not confesse,..." (p. 197)
58. "...see this amitie grounded vpon a little affection, will soon coniecture that it shall be dissolued vpon a light occasion:..." (p. 197)
59. "...to decide the question, but beeing of deeper discretion.. to debate the guarrel." (p. 198)
60. "...the triall I haue had of thy manners, cutteth off diuers termes which...in the like matter." (p. 198)
61. "And sithens a long discourse argueth folly, and delicate words incurre the suspition of flattery,..." (p. 198)
62. "...as might direct my steps being a straunger, & resemble my manners being a scholler,..." (p. 198)
63. "Thou maist well perceiue that I did beleue thee, that so soone I dyd loue thee, and I hope thou wilt the rather loue me, in that...thee." (p. 199)
64. "...they wanted neither meate, neither Musicke,..." (p. 199)
65. "...they vsed not onely one boord, but one bedde, one booke..." (p. 199)
66. "...who wanne hir by right of loue, and shoulde haue worne hir by right of lawe,..." (p. 199)

67. "...broken the bondes of marriage, and forbidden the banes of Matrimonie." (p. 199)
68. "...reseruing onely hir honestie as the chiefe stay of hir honour." (p. 200)
69. "...and by so much the lesse it ought to be offenciue, by how much the lesse it is able to offend you,..." (p. 200-1)
70. "...in loue hath made you learned, and whose learning hath made you so louely:..." (p. 201)
71. "...and by so much the more you ought to lyke it, by how much the more you use to lye in it." (p. 201)
72. "...and giue you occasion rather to laugh at my rashnesse, then to lyke my reasons." (p. 201)
73. "...to excuse my boldnesse to you, who were the cause of my blyndenesse." (p. 201)
74. "...an vnthrif in reiecting profit, then a Stoicke in re-nouncing pleasure." (p. 201)
75. "...whether the qualities of the mynde, or the composition of the man,..." (p. 210)
76. "...cause women most to lyke, or whether beautie or witte moue men most to loue." (p. 201)
77. "...the more the graces of the one are to be preferred before the gifts of the other,..." (p. 201)
78. "...a sweete Panther with a deuouring paunch, a sower poyson in a siluer potte." (p. 202)
79. "...that they disdaine them most that most desyre them." (p. 202)
80. "It is a worlde to see the doating of theyr louers, and theyr dealing with them,..." (p. 202)
81. "...the reuealing of whose subtil traines would cause me to shead teares,..." (p. 202)
82. "...eyther armed you to practise the like subteltie, or accused my self of periury." (p. 202)
83. "But I mean not to offend your chast mynds, w<sup>t</sup> the rehersal of their vnchast manners,..." (p. 202)
84. "When the blacke crowes foote shall appeare in theyr eye, or the blacke Oxe treade on their foote,..." (p. 203)
85. "...if you looke for comfort in your hoary haires, be not coye when you haue your golden lockes,..." (p. 203)
86. "...in the wayning of your brauery, be not squeymish in the waxing of your beautie,..." (p. 203)
87. "...your discourse hathe hetherto bredde delight, I am loth to hinder you in the sequele of your deuises." (p. 203)
88. "And I would y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen here present wer as ready to credit my prooffe, as y<sup>e</sup> gentlewomen...owne prayses,..." (p. 204)
89. "...albeit theyr hartes seeme tender, yet they harden them..." (p. 204)
90. "...for being framed as it were of the perfection of men, they be

- free from all such...prouoke them..." (p. 204)
91. "...men accuse women of crueltie, bicause they themselves want ciuilitie,..." (p. 204)
92. "...prefer a straunger before thy countryman? A starter before thy componion?" (p. 205)
93. "Why Euphues feature is worthy as good as I, But Philautus his fayth is worthy a better." (p. 205)
94. "Can he condemne me of disloyaltie, when he is the onely cause of my dislyking?" (p. 205)
95. "...therefore my change is to be excused, by how much the more my choyce is excellent:..." (p. 206)
96. "...and by so much the lesse I am to be condemned, by how much the more Euphues is to be commended." (p. 206)
97. "But fye Lucilla, why doste thou flatter thy selfe in thyne owne follye? canst thou fayne Euphues thy friend, whome by... thy foe?" (p. 206)
98. "Dydest not thou accuse women of inconstancie? dydest not thou accompt them easy to be wonne? dydest not thou condemne them of weakenesse?" (p. 206)
99. "What sounder argument can he haue against thee, then thine owne answer?" (p. 206)
100. "...worthy to enherite his possessions, whom he accompteth vnworthy to enioe thy person?" (p. 207)
101. "And as the softe waxe receiueth what soeuer print be in the seale, and...being sealed...representeth..." (p. 207)
102. "As for me seeing I am not fedde with their pap, I am not to be ledde by their perswasions." (p. 207)
103. "...for I am as farre from lust, as I am from reason, and as neare to loue as I am to folly." (p. 207)
104. "...the Sea Crabbe swimmeth alwayes agaynst the streame, so wit alwayes striueth agaynst wisedome:..." (p. 208)
105. "...eateth the Sea...recured; the Torteyse...sucketh...reuiued, the Beare...lycketh...is recouered:..." (p. 208)
106. "...whose blossome sauoreth lyke Honny, whose budde is more sower then gall." (p. 208)
107. "...to recure our maladyes, but reason to vse the meanes." (p. 108)
108. "But why go I about to hinder the course of love, with the discourse of law?" (pp. 208-9)
109. "...that hee that stoppeth the streame forceth it to swell higher?" (p. 209)
110. "...woulde I were out of this madde moode,...were both of one minde." (p. 209)
111. "...she be perswaded of my loyaltie, that...proofe of my loue?" (p. 209)
112. "...being so lewdly chayned at y<sup>e</sup> first, will be as lyghtly changed at the last,..." (p. 209)
113. "...cometh on y<sup>e</sup> suddaine, by so much the lesse will she

thinke it certeyne." (p. 209)

114. "...neyther conceiue sinisterly of my sodayne sute, neyther be coye to receiue me into hir seruice,..." (p. 209)
115. "...the league of fayth, to enherite the land of folly?" (p. 210)
116. "I but my colde welcome foretelleth my colde suit,...some good Fortune." (p. 210)
117. "...to simple to decypher beautie, or supersticious not to desire it?" (p. 210)
118. "...deeme him a saint...or a sotte in not discerning?" (p. 210)
119. "...I resemble him in wit, I mean a little to dissemble with him in wyles..." (p. 210)
120. "If thine eares be annointed with...Syria...mine eyes had been rubbed with the sirrop..." (p. 210)
121. "...wyth some pitie haue aunswered hys desyre, or with some perswasion haue stayed hir death." (p. 211)
122. "It was the heate of hys lust, that made hyr hast to ende hir lyfe,..." (p. 211)
123. "...but hee of rashnesse to attempt a Ladye furiouslye, and shee of rygor to punishe hys follye in hir owne fleshe,..." (p. 211)
124. "...and although I suspect many things, yet...my selfe of no one thing." (p. 211)
125. "...companion in thy mirth, and...as careful wyth thee in thy moane." (p. 211)
126. "If altogether thou maist not be cured, yet maist thou be comforted..." (pp. 211-12)
127. "Thou hast tried me, therefore trust mee, thou hast trusted me in many things, therefore trie me in this one thing." (p. 212)
128. "...be gotten with the losse of my body, then lost by getting a kingdome." (p. 212)
129. "They y<sup>t</sup> begin to pine of a consuption, w<sup>t</sup>out delay preserue theselues w<sup>t</sup> cullisses,..." (p. 212)
130. "...to loue, & the wisest wit to lust:" (p. 212)
131. "The example whereof...no lesse profitable the<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> experiēce to me is like to be perilous." (p. 212)
132. "I know my successe will be good, but I know not how to haue accesse to my goddesse,..." (p. 213)
133. "...neither do I want courage to discouer my loue to my friēd, but some colour to cloak my coming to y<sup>e</sup> house of Ferardo,..." (p. 213)
134. "...enforced perforce to challenge that courtesie at thy handes, which earst thou didst promise with thy heart,..." (p. 213)
135. "...that either thou wilt be to bold to practise, or my body too weake to purge." (p. 213)
136. "...aunswered his forged gloase with this friendly cloase." (p. 214)

137. "...rather be talking wyth them, then tatling of them,..." (p. 214)
138. "...not onely a comfort in my life, but also a companion in my loue:..." (p. 214)
139. "Liulia is a wench of more witte then beautie, Lucilla of more beautie then witte,..." (p. 214)
140. "...there is not one in birthe, to bee compared wyth any of them both." (p. 214)
141. "...let vs goe deuoutly to the shrine of our Saints there to offer our deuotion,..." (pp. 214-5)
142. "...that such a woud must be healed wher it was first hurt,..." (p. 215)
143. "...had not womanly shamefastnesse, and Philautus his presence, stayed hir wisdome." (p. 215)
144. "...your longe absence gaue mee occasion to...your late entertainment,..." (p. 215)
145. "...thoughe your courtesie made vs nothing to doubt of our welcome, yet modesty caused vs to..." (p. 215)
146. "...tended to their prayses, and therefore the ende must tye vp the just prooffe,..." (p. 216)
147. "For as they be harde to be wonne without tryall of greate faith, so...hard to be lost without great cause of ficklenesse." (p. 216)
148. "...and were I perswaded that all the Diuelles in hell were woemen, I woulde neuer liue deuoutlye to enherite heauen,...." (p. 216)
149. "...or y<sup>t</sup> they were al Saintes in heauen, I woulde liue more strictly for feare of hell..." (p. 216)
150. "...more beautifull then men? Are not men so bewytched with their..." (p. 217)
151. "...I feare mee men should neuer winne them to their wills, or weane them from their minde." (p. 217)
152. "...hasty warnings for a harty welcome and..." (p. 217)
153. "...that I can neither quench them wyth the water of free will, neyther coole them wyth wisedome." (p. 218)
154. "...euery part of mee prisoner, and brought me to this deep distresse, but seeinge women when one praiseth them for their desertes,..." (p. 218)
155. "Yet will you cōmonly object this to such as serue you & sterue to winne your good wil,..." (p. 218)
156. "...that the faith of men though it frye in their woordes, it freeseth in their works:..." (p. 218)
157. "...others seeme counterfaite in their deedes, yet Lucilla perswade your selfe that Euphues will bee alwayes curraunt in his dealinges." (p. 219)
158. "Lucilla although she were contented to heare this desired discourse, yet did she seeme to bee somewhat displeased:..." (p. 219)
159. "...they fell to suche agreement as poore Philautus woulde not

- haue agreed vnto if hee had bene present,..." (p. 220)
160. "...made mine ears glowe at the rehearsall of your loue, so haue you galled my hart with the remembrance..." (p. 220)
161. "...liued wythout suspition of lewdnesse, and shall I nowe incurre the daunger of sensuall lybertie?" (p. 220)
162. "...thinke me easely entised to the bent of your bow, bicause I was easely entreated to lysten..." (p. 220)
163. "...to excell all other in beautie, did you deeme that I would exceed all other in beastlynesse?" (p. 220)
164. "...but that commonly we poore wenches are deluded through lyght beliefe, and ye men are naturally enclined craftely to leade your lyfe." (p. 220)
165. "You haue made so large proffer of your seruice, and so fayre promises of fidelytie,..." (p. 220)
166. "...that were I not ouercharie of mine honestie, you would inueigle me to shake handes with chastitie." (p. 220)
167. "...would soone weane mee from the teate of Vesta to the toyes of Venus..." (p. 221)
168. "Thou arte not the first that hath solicited this sute, but the first that goeth about to seduce mee,..." (p. 221)
169. "...neyther discernest thou more then other, but darest more then any,..." (p. 221)
170. "...neyther hast thou more arte to discouer thy meaninge, but more hearte to open thy minde:..." (p. 221)
171. "...eyther therefore dissemble thy fancie, or desist from thy folly..." (p. 221)
172. "Although my face cause him to mistrust my loyaltie, yet my fayth enforceth him to giue mee this lybertie,..." (pp. 221-2)
173. "...though he be suspitious of my fayre hew, yet he is secure of my firme honestie." (p. 222)
174. "whose words & bodies watch but for a winde, whose feete are euer fleeting,..." (p. 222)
175. "...whose fayth plighted on the shoare, is toured to periurie when they hoiste saille." (p. 222)
176. "Who more false to Ariadne then Theseus? yet he a sayler. Who more fickle to Medea then Iason? yet he a starter:..." (p. 222)
177. "...which thou madest against beautie, saying it was a deceiptfull bayte with a deadly hooke,..." (p. 222)
178. "To desire the wight that will worke thy death?" (p. 222)
179. "...that thouge thou pretend faithe in thy words, thou deuisest fraude in thy heart:..." (p. 222)
180. "...y<sup>t</sup> though thou seeme to prefer loue, thou art inflamed with lust." (p. 222)
181. "...if in loue I cast beyonde the moone, which bringeth vs women to endlesse moane." (p. 222)
182. "...though I am able to cōvince none by prooffe, yet am I en-



- forced to suspect one vppon probabilyties..." (p. 223)
183. "Alas we silly soules which haue neyther witte to decypher the wyles of women, nor wisedome to dissemble our affection,..." (p. 223)
184. "The Spider weaueth a fine webbe to hang the Fly, the Wolf weareth a faire face to deuoure..." (p. 223)
185. "...that the whole heard of Deare stande at the gaze if they... that the Dolphin by the sound of Musicke..." (p. 223)
186. "...if the wilde Deare be caughte with an apple, that the tame Damzell is wonne with a blossome,..." (p. 223)
187. "...mee rather to shew what our sexe should doe, then to open what yours doth." (p. 223)
188. "And seeing I cannot by reason restrayne your importunate sute, I will by rigour done on my selfe,..." (p. 223)
189. "Mee thinkes Euphues chaungeing so your coloure vpon the sodaine, you will soone chaunge your coppie:..." (p. 224)
190. "...if you would buy all my thoughts at that price, I should neuer be wearye of thinking,..." (p. 224)
191. "...but that you keepe silence vntill I haue uttered my minde: and secrecie when I haue vnfolded my meaning." (p. 225)
192. "If I should offende in the one I were to bold, if in the other too beastly." (p. 225)
193. "Well then Euphues (sayd shee) so it is that for the hope that I conceiue of thy loyaltie and the happy successe that is lyke to..." (p. 225)
194. "...may any wayes breede they contentation, sure I am that it will euery way worke my comforte." (p. 225)
195. "...vse such secrecie in this matter that my father haue no incklyng heereoff, before I haue framed his minde fitte for our purpose." (p. 225)
196. "Tush Philautus was liked for fashion sake, but neuer loued for fancie sake, & this I vow,..." (p. 225)
197. "...that my father shall sooner martir me in the fire then marry me to Philautus." (p. 225)
198. "No no Euphues, thou onely hast wonne me by loue, and shalt only weare me by law,..." (p. 225)
199. "...shall sooner disherite me of my patrimony, then dishonour me in breaking my promise." (p. 225)
200. "It is not his great manners, but thy good manners, that..." (p. 225)
201. "howe might I excell thee in courtesie, whome no mortall creature can exceede in constancie?" (p. 226)
202. "...to vndertake any exploite be it neuer so daungerous, to hazarde himselfe in any enterprise, be it neuer so desperate:" (p. 226)
203. "...opportunitie to conferre wyth his louer, had small lust to continue with the gentlewomen any longer,..." (p. 226)
204. "...seeinge therefore hee coulde frame no meanes to worke his

delight, hee coyned an excuse to hasten his departure,..." (p. 226)

205. "...as a guest more bolde then welcome, although...to bee the better welcome..." (p. 226)
206. "...finding therefore his daughter at leasure, and hauing knowledge of hir former loue, spake..." (p. 227)
207. "...as thou hast longe tyme lyued a mayden, so nowe thou must learne to bee a Mother,..." (p. 227)
208. "...as shoulde be of good wealth able to maynteine thee, of great worship able to..." (p. 227)
209. "...who wanteth nothing that shoulde cause thy liking, neyther hath any thinge that should breede thy loathing." (p. 227)
210. "And surely I reioyce the more, that thou shalt be linked to him in marriage, whome thou hast loued as I heare beeinge a mayden,..." (p. 227)
211. "...God doth witnesse the one in your consciencs, so the worlde may testifie the other by your conuersations,..." (p. 227)
212. "...neither if I were so dysposed woulde I bee so proude to desire one of noble progenie,..." (p. 228)
213. "...one as both I may loue, and you may like." (p. 229)
214. "...yet he dissembled his fury, to the ende he might by craft discouer hir fancie," (p. 229)
215. "...Philautus in the eare (who stood as though he had a Flea in his eare)" (p. 229)
216. "...and thy hot woords bewray thy heauy wrath,..." (p. 229)
217. "...by the compulsion of the parents, then by consent of the parties,..." (p. 229)
218. "...neyther can Philautus loue thee the worse, in that thou louest thy selfe so well,..." (p. 229)
219. "If thy Mother had bene of that minde when shee was a mayden, thou haddest not nowe bene borne to bee of this minde to bee..." (p. 230)
220. "...thou shouldest leade a lyfe to thine owne lykeinge in earthe, then to thy greate tormentes leade Apes in Hell." (p. 230)
221. "...what slender profite they bring...what sleight pleasure to..." (p. 230)
222. "...what greate griefe to theire parentes which ioue most in their ofspringe, and desire moste to enioye the...of a graund-father." (p. 230)
223. "...allowed of the Patriarches, hallowed of the olde Prophetes,..." (p. 230)
224. "...partner of thy desire, which will be partaker of thy dysese, ..." (p. 230)
225. "...an aunswere whiche pleased Ferardo but a little, and pinched Philautus on the parsons side on thys manner." (p. 230)
226. "Neyther doe I loue hym so meanely that I should be ashamed... so meane that I ...shamefullye:" (p. 231)



227. "What his wealth is I neither know it nor waye it, what his wit is all Naples doth knowe it,..." (p. 231)
228. "And I hope Philautus..you Father bee displeased in that Philautus is displaced." (p. 231)
229. "...that sharpe wordes would but sharpen hir froward wil,..." (p. 231)
230. "...yet wisdome wylleth mee to pawse, vntill I haue called what maye happen to my remembraunce, and warneth thee to bee circum-specte, leaste thy rashe conceyte bringe a sharpe repentaunce." (p. 231)
231. "...stedfast friende cloake the mallice of a mortall foe?" (p. 232)
232. "...which at the first encreasing of our familyaritie, was very zealous, is nowe at the last cast become most faythlesse." (p. 232)
233. "...thee with faire wordes, thou wouldest neuer haue loued him, but haddest thou not giuen him faire lookes, he would neuer haue lyked thee:..." (p. 233)
234. "...first brake his minde, I, but Lucilla first bewrayed hir meaning." (p. 233)
235. "...I haue shrined thee in my heart for a trustie friend, I will shunne thee hereafter as a trothles foe," (p. 233)
236. "...I perceiue at the last (although beeing deceiued it be to late)..." (p. 233)
237. "...that friendshippe though it be plighted by shaking the hande, yet it is shaken off by fraude of the hearte." (p. 233)
238. "...for the loue of a fruitelesse pleasure, vyolate the league of faythfull friendshippe?" (p. 234)
239. "...the entising lookes of a lewd wenche, then the entyre loue of a loyall friende?" (p. 234)
240. "...both falselye and forgedlye to deceiue mee, why diddest thou flatter and dissemble with mee at the firste?" (p. 234)
241. "...why diddest thou breake them? if dislyke thee, why diddest thou prayse them?" (p. 234)
242. "...the pure Franckencense which smelleth most sweete when it is in the fire?" (p. 234)
243. "And if I doe, it is not for want of strengthe to maynteyne my iust guarrell, but of will which thinketh scorne to gette so vayne a conquest." (p. 234)
244. "...selfe his conquest, that thou beeing deluded by Lucilla maist...deceiued, then I hauinge conquered..." (p. 234)
245. "...made it a lyght matter to forsweare hir olde friend Philautus, so she may make it a mocke to forsake hir new pheere..." (p. 235)
246. "...such a dastarde that he is not able to withstande thy courage, or such a dullarde that...thy crafte." (p. 235)
247. "...it lawfull for the desire of a kingdome to transgresse the bounds of honestie, and for the loue of a lady to violate and breake the bands of amitie." (p. 235)

248. "...neyther more venterous to challenge the compatte, then I valyaunt to aunswer the quarrel." (p. 236)
249. "...of lyttle wealth and lesse witte haunted..." (p. 237)
250. "...neyther such sure faith, be rewarded with so, sodeyne forgetfulnessse." (p. 237)
251. "...it lawfull to deceiue thy friende, must take no scorne to be deceiued of thy foe." (p. 238)
252. "...him worthy of thee, and thou unworthy of him,..." (p. 240)
253. "And in that you bringe in the example of a beast to confirme your folly, you shewe therein your beastly...to followe..." (p. 240)
254. "...their incontinencie, should flye y<sup>e</sup> like impudencie, not follow the like..." (p. 240)
255. "...thy stomacke hunger yet thy heart will not suffer thee to eate." (p. 240)
256. "...Athens the nourse of wisdome, to inhabite Naples the nourisher of wantonnesse?" (p. 241)
257. "...olde companions to search for new friends, I relected the graue and fatherly counsayle of Eubulus,..." (p. 241)
258. "...that women had bene as we men, that is...woe vnto men,..." (p. 241)
259. "I was halfe perswaded that they were made of the perfection of men, & would be comforters, but now I see...infection of the Serpent, and will be corasiues." (p. 241)
260. "...study of learning what thing so pretious as witte? if in the idle trade of loue what thing more pestilent then witte?" (p. 241)
261. "...hath endued with a lyttle witte, which I haue abused with an obstinate will,..." (p. 241)
262. "...or with musing to renue his ill fortune, or recant his olde follies." (p. 242)
263. "...neyther witte to order thy doinges neyther will to frame... discretion," (p. 243)
264. "shall my kinde hearte be rewarded with such vnkinde hate?" (p. 244)
265. "...I brought thee vpp lyke a cockney, and thou hast handled mee lyke a cockescombe..." (p. 244)
266. "...I can neither remember our miseris without griefe, nor redresse our mishaps without groanes." (p. 246)
267. "How wantonly, yea, and howe willingly..." (p. 246)
268. "...our golden time, and mispent our gotten treasure?" (p. 246)
269. "How curious were we to please our Lady, how carelesse to displease our Lord?" (p. 246)
270. "How deuoute in seruing our Godesse, howe desperate in forgetting our God?" (p. 246)
271. "...nothing perswade vs to wisdome, yet shame should prouoke vs to wyt." (p. 246)

272. "...conuince mee of mallice in bewraying...or condemne me of mischiefe..." (p. 246)
273. "...men as altogether faultlesse, neyther to fall out with woe-  
men as al..." (p. 247)
274. "I know Curio to be steele to the backe, standerd bearer in Venus  
campe, sworne to the crewe,..." (p. 247)
275. "...of salt wyth Lucilla, he shall taste...sorrow in his loue,"  
(p. 247)
276. "...to renounce his Ladye as most pernicious, or redeeme his  
lybertie as most pretious." (p. 247)
277. "...deceiued by fancie, the glasse of pestilence, or deluded  
by woemen the gate to perdition:" (p. 247)
278. "...bring delyght, the ende bringeth destruction." (p. 248)
279. "...reape profite, by remedye of pleasure." (p. 248)
280. "If honest I shall feare hir death, if immodest, I shall be  
weary of hir lyfe." (p. 248)
281. "...with their wanton glaunces, or allured with their wicked  
guyles," (p. 248)
282. "...eyther enchanted with their beautie or enamoured with their  
brauerie,..." (p. 248)
283. "...I must pine in cares, or perish with curses." (p. 248)
284. "If fertile to beare children my care is increased, if barren  
my curse..." (p. 248)
285. "...wasted in sighes, and worne in sobbes,..." (p. 248)
286. "...the very blossome of loue is sower, the budde cannot be  
sweete." (p. 249)
287. "...In time preuent daunger least vntimelye thou runne...perrills."  
(p. 249)
288. "...and the medicine bringeth dubble care, when the maladye is  
past cure." (p. 249)
289. "What lesse then the grayne of Mustardeseede, in time...is  
greater then the stalke thereof?" (p. 249)
290. "The slender twigge groweth to a stately tree,..." (p. 249)
291. "...into the hot liuer of a heedlesse louer." (p. 250)
292. "...the example of others idlenesse...yt fault, then experience  
of mine owne folly." (p. 250)
293. "Howe dissolute haue I bene in striuing against good counsayle,  
howe resolute in standing in mine owne conceite?" (p. 250)
294. "...howe wanton with too much cockeringe, howe waywarde in hear-  
ing correction?" (p. 250)
295. "...creepeth into the minde by priuie crafte, and keepeth his  
holde by maine courage." (p. 251)
296. "The man beeing idle the minde is apte...the minde being voide  
of exercise the man,..." (p. 251)
297. "Loue giues place to laboure, laboure and thou shalt neuer loue."  
(p. 251)

298. "The olde verse standeth as yet in his olde vertue:" (p. 251)
299. "...swilling of wine, doth so weaken the sences, and bewitch the soule,..." (p. 251)
300. "...following those at an ynche that studye pleasure, and fly-inge those swiftlye that take paines." (p. 251)
301. "...maiste gather profite to thy purse, and pleasure to thy minde." (p. 251)
302. "If thou bee so nice that thou canst no waye brooke...or so vn-wise that thou wilt not beat thy braynes..." (p. 251)
303. "...study all thy time, all thy treasure to the attayning of the sacred..." (p.251)
304. "...no sooner on the grounde, but the other ready to slippe into the graue." (p. 252)
305. "If this seeme to straight a dyet for thy straininge disease," (p. 252)
306. "...or to holy a profession, for so hollow a person," (p. 252)
307. "...Is it not folly to shewe wit to women...nor willinge to receyue fruite..." (p. 252)
308. "...and thus beginninge to delight to be a good husband, thou shalt begin to detest to be in loue with an idle huswife," (p. 253)
309. "...when profite whall begin to fill thy purse with golde, then pleasure whall haue no force..." (p. 253)
310. "...out the remembraunce of thy former loue, and repent thee of thy foolishe lust." (p. 253)
311. "...wyll deeme my precepts hard, and esteeme my perswasions haggarde:" (p. 253)
312. "...is a corasiue to the stomacke of a louer, but a comforte to a godly lyuer," (p. 253)
313. "...a thousande pykes, to escape ten thousand perills." (p. 253)
314. "...meane in their frumpes, nor measure in their follye." (p. 254)
315. "...and sinew of their disposition, if she haue no sighte in deskante," (p. 254)
316. "It is a worlde to see how commonly we...collusions of woemen," (p. 254)
317. "...more carnally affected, then moued in conscience." (p. 255)
318. "...lesse affected with desire, and lesse infected with despaire," (p. 255)
319. "...a fountayne running into many riuers, is of lesse force,..." (p. 255)
320. "...faine thy self as colde as y<sup>e</sup> hill Caucasus, carry two faces on one hood, couer thy flaming fancie with fained ashes,..." (p. 255)
321. "...hew be merrye, when thy heart is melancholy," (p. 255)
322. "...a pleasaunt countenaunce, with a pyned conscience,..." (p. 255)

323. "...to recouer a trifle, thou renewe thine olde trouble." (p. 256)
324. "...not prodigal of thy golde, nor precise in thy goinge," (p. 256)
325. "...as ready to prouide a salue as thou wast hastie in seeking a sore." (p. 257)
326. "...as fickle as Lucilla, yet hath there many bene as faithful as Lucretia." (p. 258)
327. "...the modest sex of honest maydens, though he forswear the lewde sort of vnchast minions." (p. 258)
328. "Though y<sup>e</sup> teares of the Hart be salt, yet y<sup>e</sup> teares of y<sup>e</sup> Bore be sweet," (p. 258)
329. "...though y<sup>e</sup> teares of some women be counterfaite to deceiue, yet y<sup>e</sup> teares of many be currāt..." (p. 258)
330. "...& worship thē in my life whō I shall know to be worthy in their liuing," (p. 258)
331. "...for although the falshood of Lucilla haue caused me to for-sake my wonted dotage, yet the faith of some Ladye may cause me once againe to fall into mine olde disease." (p. 258)

## II. Annomination

NOTE: Often, more than one example of annomination occurs within a line of text. The number placed in parentheses after the example indicates the exact number of examples used within that space.

1. "...a young gentleman of great patrimonie, and of so comely a personage,..." (p. 184)
2. "...Fortune counterfaite, but was...onely currant." (p. 184)
3. "...vsing iesting without meane, & abusing mirth without measure..." (p. 184)
4. "...so the sharpest witte hath his wanton will, and the holiest heade his wicked waye..." (p. 184)
5. "...Aristippus his wart, Lycurgus his wenne..." (p. 184)
6. "Alexander valiaunt in warre, yet gyuen to wine." (p. 184)
7. "Salomon wyse, yet too wanton:..." (p. 184)
8. "...and the Cambricke sooner stained then the course Canuas:..." (p. 185) (2)
9. "...and leauing the rule of reason, rashly ranne vnto destruction." (p. 185)
10. "[who preferring fancy before friends, & his present humor, before honour to come,..." (p. 185) (2)
11. "...where they should put a rod vnder their gyrdle, when...past grace, & leaue them rich executors of goods, & poore executors of godlyness,..." (p. 185)
12. "...that witte is the better if it bee the deerer bought:..." (p. 185)

13. "(a place of more pleasure then profite, and yet of more profite then pietie)" (p. 185)
14. "...the very walles and windowes whereof shewed..." (p. 185)
15. "(whether for weerinesse hee..., or for wantonnesse woulde not..." (p. 185)
16. "...the fleetest fishe swalloweth the delicatest bayte, that the highest soaring Hawke..." (p. 185) (2)
17. "...the Spider to suck poyson,...the Drone, as the Doue,..." (p. 186) (2)
18. "...so warilye, that hee [singled his game wiselye." (p. 186)
19. "...Venus beautie from Iunos brauery,..." (p. 186)
20. "...his Eloquent tongue somewhat tauntinge, yet wyth delight, his myrthe without measure, yet not wythout wytte,..." (p. 186) (3)
21. "...hys nurture; and to muse at hys Nature,..." (p. 186)
22. "...the one as moste pernicious, and enflamed wyth...precious;..." (p. 186)
23. "...wyth watrye eyes, as one lamentinge his wantonnesse,..." (p. 186)
24. "...and my hoarie haires (ambassadors of experience)..." (p. 187)
25. "...to vtter my minde, I meane to be...meaninge." (p. 187)
26. "As thy birth doth shewe...of so noble a brute,..." (p. 187)
27. "...who in their fattest and most fertill groundes..." (p. 187)
28. "Or of good Gardeiners who in..." (p. 187)
29. "...Painters who for the whitest woorke caste the..." (p. 187)
30. "...as good Gardners to..., as they were grafters to brynge foorth such fruite,..." (p. 187)
31. "...or as cunnige Painters, as they were happie parentes,..." (p. 187)
32. "...it is to late to shutte the stable doore when the steede is stolen:..." (p. 188)
33. "...sleeping with meate in his mouthe, & most horribly..." (p. 188)
34. "...traines of womens wyles and..." (p. 188)
35. "...a young soiourner, I an olde senior, thou a straunger, I a Citizen thou secure..." (p. 188)
36. "...I loue the highe climinge of thy capacitie, by so muche the more I feare thy fall." (p. 189) (2)
37. "The fine christall is sooner crazed then the harde marble,..." (p. 189)
38. "...the greenest Beeche burneth faster..." (p. 189)
39. "...the fairest silke is soonest soyled, and the sweetest wine tourneth to the sharpest vineger,..." (p. 189)
40. "...infect the cleerest complection, and the Caterpillar cleaueth ..." (p. 189)

41. "...is allured with small enticement vnto vice, and moste subiecte to yelde vnto vanitie,..." (p. 189)
42. "...spoyleth the whole potte of porredge, one..." (p. 189)
43. "...betweene staringe and starke blinde, wit and wisdome, loue and lust." (p. 189) (2)
44. "Bee merrye but with modestie, be sober but not to sulloume, bee valiaunt but not too venterous." (p. 189) (3)
45. "...bee comely but not costly, thy..." (p. 190)
46. "...therefore to thancke you for the first, so it standes mee vppon to thincke..." (p. 190)
47. "...the suspition of fraude, the other conuince me of folly." (p. 190)
48. "...that my bringing up shoulde bee a blemish to my birth." (p. 190)
49. "...my parents of peeuishnesse,..." (p. 190)
50. "Who so seuere as the Stoyckes, which lyke stockes were moued with no melody?" (p. 190) (2)
51. "Though all men bee made of one mettall, yet...in one moulde,..." (p. 190)
52. "...maketh the gold to shine and the straw to smother,..." (p. 190)
53. "The silly Mouse will by no manner of meanes be tamed,..." (p. 190)
54. "...the subtill Foxe may well be beaten, but neuer broken..." (p. 190)
55. "...if you pownde spices they smell the sweeter, season the woode neuer so well the wine..." (p. 191) (2)
56. "...needelesse hauing shewed sufficient, or bootelesse seeinge those..." (p. 191)
57. "...example of the hotte and harde yron,..." (p. 191)
58. "...so wicked & barbarous, any Turke so vile and brutish,..." (p. 192)
59. "...bountefully endewed mee with hir giftes, why deeme...gracelesse?" (p. 192)
60. "...my sportes and pleasures, my pastimes, my common dalyaunce, my delyghtes..." (p. 192) (2)
61. "...more blisse then bale, more happines then heauines:..." (p. 192) (2)
62. "...flourishinge Baye tree, and the old withered Beeche?" (p. 192)
63. "...we merry, you melancholy, wee zealous..." (p. 192)
64. "...one salue for all sores? one sauce for all meates?" (p. 193)
65. "...a canckred storehouse of all strife, a common stewes for all strumpettes, the sinke of shame, and...all sin,..." (p. 193)
66. "...bewitched with leaudenesse, neyther entised with lasciuiousnesse." (p. 193)



67. "...you haue lyued long & learned lyttle,..." (p. 193)
68. "...your selfe either too simple to rayne the siege of..." (p. 193)
69. "...was neuer Stoycke so strict, nor Iesuite so supersticious..." (p. 194)
70. "...rather talke of it then try it." (p. 194)
71. "So these olde..with fancie, accompte all honest recreation meere folly,..." (p. 194)
72. "Seeing therefore it is labour lost for mee..." (p. 194)
73. "They that vse to steale honny, burne hemlocke...their hiues,..." (p. 194)
74. "...and your perswasions pithie in your owne conceipte, yet beyng well wayed without, they be shadowes without substaunce,..." (p. 194) (3)
75. "...and he was more enclined to wantonnesse, then to wisedome, with a deepe sigh the tears trickling downe his cheekes,..." (pp. 194-5) (2)
76. "...if thy wealth wast, thy wit will giue but small warmth, & if thy wit...wilfulnes, that thy wealth..." (p. 195)
77. "...ye common weale for welth to maintaine warre, or..." (p. 195)
78. "...preferring the blossome before the fruite, the budde before... the greene blade before..." (p. 195)
79. "...one flattereth an other in hys owne folly, and...of his fellowe, ...with fancie..." (p. 195)
80. "...and as their witte wresteth them to vice,...their vanitie." (p. 195)
81. "...the more it is bowed the better it serueth, yet the bow the more it is bent and occupied,..." (p. 196)
82. "...the weaker it waxeth, though..." (p. 196)
83. "...then the sawe, the waxe yeeldeth better and sooner to the seale, then the steele to the stampe..." (p. 196)
84. "...& playne Beeche is easier to be carued and occupied then the knottie Boxe." (p. 196)
85. "Such is the Nature of these nouises..." (p. 196)
86. "...that thincke to haue learning without labour, and treasure without trauayle,..." (p. 196) (2)
87. "...and the fairest Iewell fashioned with the harde hammer." (p. 196)
88. "...whether his pregnant wit, or his pleasaunt conceits..." (p. 196)
89. "...Can any treasure in this transitorie pilgrimage, be..." (p. 197)
90. "...the pricking of thy finger, the percing of his heart..." (p. 197)
91. "that tryall maketh trust? that there is falsehood in fellowship?...of manners, make the coniunction of mindes?" (p. 197) (3)



92. "...so y<sup>e</sup> deep<sup>e</sup>st loue tourneth to the deadliest hate." (p. 197)
93. "...it is doubtful, & so difficult, that I dare not..." (p. 197)
94. "...of their friendship and falling out to be somewhat long, yet being somewhat straunge..." (p. 198) (2)
95. "...to measure the firmeresse of my faith, by the fewnes..." (p. 199)
96. "Tryall shall proue trust, heere is my hand, my hear<sup>t</sup>,..." (p. 199) (2)
97. "...vpon so short warning, to make so soone a conclusion..." (p. 199)
98. "...owne continuance & the great countenaunce." (p. 199)
99. "...who although he had a courtly crew of gentlewomen..." (p. 199)
100. "...so this gallant gyrle more faire then fortunate, and yet more fortunate then faithfull..." (p. 199) (2)
101. "...it were for nycenesse or for niggardnesse of curtesie, gaue hym such a colde welcome that he repented that he was come." (p. 200) (2)
102. "...out of concept with hir coy countenaunce..." (p. 200)
103. "...the custome is strange and the countrey barbarous, if the... with coynesse, then I am...courtesie..." (p. 200)
104. "Sir, our country is ciuile, & our gentlewom<sup>e</sup>n are curteous, but in Naples it is compted..." (p. 200)
105. "...seeing the shade doth often shilde your beautie...of the shadowe..." (p. 200)
106. "...the weakest must still to the wall, where none will..." (p. 201)
107. "...that your lyste standes for lawe..." (p. 201)
108. "...make you wearie but neuer the wyser..." (p. 201)
109. "...often disputed, but neuer determined..." (p. 201)
110. "...or witte moue men most to loue." (p. 201)
111. "The fould Toade hath a fayre stoane in his head, the fine goulde is found in the filthy earth..." (p. 202)
112. "Vertue is harbored in the hear<sup>t</sup> of him that..." (p. 202)
113. "...that in paynted pottes is hidden the deadliest poyson?" (p. 202)
114. "that in the greenest gra<sup>s</sup>s is the greatest serpent?" (p. 202)
115. "That the Cypresse tree beareth a fayre leafe but no fruite? That the Estridge carryeth fayre feathers, but rancke flesh?" (p. 202)
116. "How franticke are those louers which are carried away with the gaye glistering of the fine face?" (p. 202) (2)
117. "the beautie...with the sommers blase, & chipped with the winters blast..." (p. 202)
118. "...that it fadeth before one perceiue it florishe, of so small profit that it poysoneth those that possesse it..." (p. 202) (2)

119. "...vnfold euery wyle, & shew euery wrinckle of womens disposition." (p. 202)
120. "...secrecie, & soueraigntie, y<sup>e</sup> one to conceale their entising sleights, by the other...onely seruice." (p. 202)
121. "...not be so curyous in theyr owne conceite, or so currishe to their..." (p. 203)
122. "...theyr wealth wasted, their..." (p. 203)
123. "If you will be cherished when you be olde, be curteous while... for comfort..." (p. 203)
124. "...you be cherished for your curtesie, comforted for..." (p. 203)
125. "...to counsell those that be coye that they weaue not the webbe of theyr owne woe,..." (p. 203) (2)
126. "...nor spin the threed of their owne thraldome by their owne ouerthwartnesse." (p. 203)
127. "...in myne opinion women are to be wonne with euery wynde,..." (p. 203)
128. "...a meere trifle, & your words y<sup>e</sup> plain truth:..." (p. 204)
129. "Yet knowing promise to be debt, I wyll paye it with performance." (p. 204)
130. "...then is our sexe stronge, if forcyble, then your judgement feeble, if I fynde truth..." (p. 204) (2)
131. "...for my wages win the good will of women,..." (p. 204)
132. "...the light loue of youth which is groundd vpon lust,..." (p. 204)
133. "When they see the folly of men turne to fury, their delight to doting..." (p. 204) (2)
134. "...as it were pyne in pleasure, and to waxe pale..." (p. 204)
135. "...their sutes, their seruice, theyr letters, theyr labors, their loues, theyr lyues,..." (p. 204) (2)
136. "...cōuert them from rashness to reason,..." (p. 204)
137. "...full of wyles in not yelding to their wickednesse, faythlesse for resisting their fylthinesse." (p. 204) (2)
138. "...fight dost thou feeble betwixt faith and fancie?" (p. 205)
139. "...know the sodayne sorrow that I sustayne for thy sweete sake." (p. 205)
140. "...whose courteous bèhauioir without curiositie, whose comely..." (p. 205)
141. "...feature without fault, whose fyled speach without fraude,..." (p. 205)
142. "And canst thou Lucilla be so light of loue in forsaking Philautus to flye to Euphues?" (p. 205) (2)
143. "I but the latter loue is moste feruent. I but the firste ought to be moste faythfull." (p. 205) (2)
144. "...of thy faithfulnesse, when he hath..of thy fycklenesse?" (p. 205)

145. "...that the glasse once crased will with the leaste clappe be cracked, that the cloath...his coulour with..." (p. 205)
146. "...that the Eagles wynge will wast the fether as well of the Phoenix as of the Pheasant,..." (p. 205) (2)
147. "But can Euphues conuince me of fleetinge, seeing for his sake I breake my fidelitie?" (p. 205)
148. "Maye he iustly condemne me of trecherye, who hath this testimony as tryall..." (p. 205)
149. "...bene light to Philautus, yet I may be louely to Euphues?" (p. 206)
150. "...that moueth my mynde to this choyse,..." (p. 206)
151. "...when she espyeth the faire flower flyeth to the sweetest:..." (p. 206)
152. "...what greater tryall, then thyne owne talke?" (p. 206)
153. "...thee wanton before thou be woed, he wil gesse thou wilt be wauering when thou art wedded." (p. 206)
154. "But suppose that Euphues loue thee, that Philautus leaue thee, will thy...libertie to lyue after thyne owne lust?" (pp. 206-7)
155. "...that he wyll match thee in marryage w<sup>t</sup> a stranger, with a Grecian, with a meane man?" (p. 207)
156. "...the sonne by the sire..." (p. 207)
157. "And as the softe waxe receiueth what soeuer print be in the seale,..." (p. 207)
158. "Let my father...he lyst, I will follow mine owne lust." (p. 207)
159. "...that the sight of him might mittigate some part of my mar-tirdome." (p. 207)
160. "...that he neyther coulde comforte himself nor durst aske coun-sel of..." (p. 207)
161. "...but will rather punish thy lewdenesse, then pittie thy..." (p. 208)
162. "Was there euer any so fickle so soone...so faithlesse...so foolish...?" (p. 208)
163. "...is oftentimes hurte with hir owne honny, so is..." (p. 208)
164. "...for euerye maladye a medicine, for euery sore a salve, for euery payne a plaister, leaing only loue remedillesse?" (p. 208) (4)
165. "The filthy Sow when she is sicke, eateth the Sea Crabbe..." (p. 208)
166. "...runneth out of hande to the hearbe Dictanum, and is healed." (p. 208)
167. "O broade blasphemy agaynst the heauens...No fonde foole, no." (p. 208) (2)
168. "...to loue, by whose diuine providence we are permitted to lyve,..." (p. 208) (2)
169. "...on the fire in the Smithes forge, maketh it to flame fiercer?" (p. 209)

170. "thou wert either lesse faire or I more fortunate,..." (p. 209)
171. "...out of this madde moode,..." (p. 209)
172. "...that the greatest muchrome groweth in..." (p. 209)
173. "...with as much bountie as beautie." (p. 209)
174. "...couceiue sinisterly of my sodayne sute,..." (p. 209)
175. "...for his shadowe the last supper, so will i vse him for my shadow...Saint." (p. 209)
176. "And canst thou wretch be false to him that is faithfull to thee?" (p. 209)
177. "Shall hys curtesie be cause of thy crueltie?" (pp. 209-10)
178. "...of more force then friendshippe, loue then law, lust then loyaltie?" (p. 210) (2)
179. "...to loue and to lyve well,..." (p. 210)
180. "...caule of beautie, decerneth no colour of honestie." (p. 210)
181. "...ye fleetest fish to bite?" (p. 210)
182. "...to disdayne poore Euphues, woulde...to denye Lucilla,..." (p. 210)
183. "Fye fonde foole..." (p. 210)
184. "...to be a doubtfull fight, and a desperat ende,...a diffyculte enterance, and a defused determination,..." (p. 211)
185. "Fyre...the hardest flynte wyth the steele...by the fyre,...by fayth, by trust, by tyme." (p. 211) (2)
186. "...with coulours of continuaunce,..." (p. 211)
187. "...for a Monster in the desartes, than a Matrone of Rome." (p. 211)
188. "...yet more wyse, woulde bee wearie to unweaue that..." (p. 211)
189. "...so worne and wasted with continual mourning,..." (p. 211)
190. "Friende and fellow, as I am not...thy present weaknesse,...not priuie..." (p. 211) (2)
191. "...for these doubtes and dompes of mine,..." (p. 211)
192. "...either heale thee in parte, or helpe thee in all,..." (p. 212)
193. "I neuer yet failed, and now I will not fainte." (p. 212)
194. "Be bolde to speake & blush not..." (p. 212)
195. "thy sore is not so angry but I can salue it,...search it,..." (p. 212)
196. "...thy griefe not so great but I can ease it." (p. 212)
197. "...it selfe haue stoung thee it shal not stifle thee." (p. 212)
198. "...coolith it eftsoones wt cōserues: delays breed daḡgers, nothing so perillous as procrastinatiō." (p. 212) (3)
199. "...this cōfort & friendly counsaile, dissēbled...face, aunswering him foorthwith as followeth." (p. 212) (2)
200. "...that he which toucheth ye nettle tenderly,..." (p. 212)

201. "...is soonest stoung, yt the Fly which...y<sup>e</sup> fire is singed in the flame, that he y<sup>t</sup> dallieth with women is drawn to his woe." (p. 212) (3)
202. "The vine wattered with wine is soone withered,..." (p. 212)
203. "...y<sup>e</sup> blossom in y<sup>e</sup> fattest ground is quickly blasted,..." (p. 212)
204. "...y<sup>e</sup> fatter she is the lesse fertil she is..." (p. 212)
205. "...should I conceale it frō thee, of...to take counsaile..." (p. 212)
206. "...such a furious battle in mine own body,..." (p. 212)
207. "...it wil carry my minde (y<sup>e</sup> graud Captain...endles captiuitie." (p. 212)
208. "...thy blazing beauty without blemish, thy..." (p. 212)
209. "...thy sweet speach sauoured w<sup>t</sup> wit..." (p. 212)
210. "...thy comly mirth tempered with modesty,..." (pp. 212-13)
211. "...at the next view of thy vertues,..." (p. 213)
212. "...not of a pawn but of a prince, y<sup>e</sup> losse is to be accompted the lesse." (p. 213) (2)
213. "And though they be cōmonly in a great choler that..." (p. 213)
214. "...take euery minute x. mates, to enioy Liulia for my louing mate." (p. 213) (2)
215. "...to quench the coales with courtesie in an other,..." (p. 213)
216. "...rescue him y<sup>t</sup> is drenched in desire,..." (p. 213)
217. "...taken w<sup>t</sup> the feauer of fancie, she wil..." (p. 213)
218. "...neither in so beautifull a mould a malicious minde." (p. 213)
219. "...but some colour to cloak my coming to..." (p. 213)
220. "...y<sup>u</sup> shalt see me shoot so neere,..." (p. 213)
221. "...I wold haue swallowed mine own sorrow in silēce,..." (p. 213)
222. "...practise some pleasant cōceipt vpon thy poore patiēt:..." (p. 213)
223. "...to purge my new disease, or recouer my hoped desire." (p. 213)
224. "...wher so straunge a sicknesse is to be..." (p. 213)
225. "But seing a desperate disease is to be cōmitted to a desperate Doctor,..." (pp. 213-14)
226. "...I will follow thy counsel and become thy cure,..." (p. 214)
227. "...all to bee golde that glistered, and all to bee gospell that..." (p. 214)
228. "...hast made me priuie to thy pourpose, I will not conceale my practise,..." (p. 214)
229. "...in thy choice, so I hope thou...in thy chaunce." (p. 214)
230. "...and fill his olde heade so full of newe fables that thou..." (p. 214)

231. "...shall make thee see, the Scorpion that stung thee shall heale thee, a sharp sore hath a short cure..." (p. 215)
232. "...the falshood in fellowship, the fraude in friendship, the ...y<sup>e</sup> faire woords that make fooles faine,..." (p. 215)
233. "...either to succour himself, or salute..." (p. 215)
234. "...Lucilla began as one that best might be bolde,..." (p. 215)
235. "[Euphues takyng the tale out of Philautus..." (p. 216)
236. "...for if my curtesie, as you say, were y<sup>e</sup> cause of your coming,..." (p. 216)
237. "...your prooffe naked, and you shall find my rewarde nothings." (p. 216)
238. "...I should set downe Venus shadow without the liuely substance." (p. 216)
239. "...concerning loue or loyaltie wherin women do not..." (p. 216)
240. "It is long before the colde water seeth...it is long before salt come to his saltnesse, but being once seasoned, it neuer looseth his sauour." (p. 216)
241. "...at the last, made man as most perfect, thinking..." (p. 217)
242. "...and woemen so wyse that they detest lust." (p. 217)
243. "...should neuer winne them to their wills, or weane them..." (p. 217)
244. "...without farther pausinge, protesting it shoulde bee as well for his preferment as for his owne profite..." (p. 217)
245. "...I hope will bee so short, that my absence shall not breede thy sorrowe..." (p. 217)
246. "...beeinge so little, I am afraide my credite will bee lesse,..." (p. 218)
247. "...no guile wythout cause, neither condemneth any...of your heroycall heart, I am the better perswaded of my good hap." (p. 218) (2)
248. "...but to fetch fire, as the by word is, not to make my place of abode, I haue founde such flames..." (p. 218)
249. "...them wyth the water of free will, neyther coole them wyth wisedome." (p. 218)
250. "...hauing caughte holde of my hearte, and the sparkles of loue kindled my liuer, wyll sodeinely, thoughe secretlye flame vp into my heade, and spredde it selfe into euerye sinewe." (p. 218) (3)
251. "...to this deepe distresse, but seeinge women when one praiseth them for their desertes, deeme..." (p. 218)
252. "...to such as serue you & sterue to winne your good wil,..." (p. 218)
253. "...that the Bauin though it bourne bright, is but a blaze,..." (p. 218)
254. "...in the mouth is colde in the mawe,..." (p. 218)

255. "...yet the pure sleeke stone mounteth at the noyse,..." (p. 219)
256. "...though Polypus chaunge his hew,...though Proteus transforme  
...yet Pygmalion retaineth his..." (p. 219)
257. "But as the true golde is tryed by the touch, the pure flinte..."  
(p. 219)
258. "...so the loyall heart of the faithfull louer, is knowen by  
the tryall of his Lady:..." (p. 219)
259. "...a sacrifice for your sweet sake, as your selfe shall bee  
willinge to employe hym in your seruice." (p. 219)
260. "...desire to bee trusted any way, vntill he shall be tried  
euery way,..." (p. 219)
261. "...neither doth hee craue credite at the first, but a good  
countenaunce..." (p. 219)
262. "...yet did she seem to bee somewhat displeased..." (p. 219)
263. "...to that sex to dissemble with those, whome they most desire,  
or whether by craft they haue learned outwardly to loath that,  
which...most loue:" (p. 219) (2)
264. "...hir a lyght huswife, if she should reiect him...a very haggard,  
...holde of hir promise," (p. 219)
265. "...of hir promise, neyther unkindenesse of hir precisenesse,..."  
(p. 219)
266. "...in giuing eare to your talke, so may you convince me of  
lyghtnesse in answering such toyes,..." (p. 22)
267. "...as to solicite a sute more sharp..." (p. 220)
268. "...to the bent of your bow, bicause I was..." (p. 220)
269. "...that will frette or fume with one that loueth hir,..."  
(p. 220)
270. "...if this loue to delude mee be not dissembled." (p. 220)
271. "When the Foxe preacheth the Geese perishe..." (p. 220)
272. "The Crocodile shrowdeth greatest treason vnder most pitiful  
teares: in a kissing mouth there lyeth a gallying minde."  
(p. 220) (2)
273. "...yet am I neither so precise to refuse thy proffer, neither  
so peeuish to disdain..." (p. 220)
274. "These subtill shiftes, these paynted practises..." (p. 221) (2)
275. "...if I were to be wonne, woulde soone weane mee..." (p. 221)
276. "...were able to moue a minde halfe mortified to transgresse  
the bondes of maydenly modestie." (p. 221)
277. "...that thou shouldest be so carelesse of thine honour as to  
commit the state thereof to a stranger." (p. 221) (2)
278. "...to forgoe delightfull practises, beleue mee it is pietie  
to abstayne from pleasure." (p. 221)
279. "But thou preferrest mee before thy landes, thy lyuings, thy  
lyfe:..." (p. 221)
280. "...thou offerest thy selfe a Sacrifice for my securitie, thou  
proferest mee the whole and onely souereigntie of thy seruice;..."



(p. 221)

231. "...to the court of Cupide wherein ther be more slights then there be Hares in Athon, then Bees in Hybla, then stars in Heauen." (p. 221) (2)
282. "...of other mens matters and manners, but also very iealous ouer other mens children and maydens..." (p. 221)
283. "But why shouldest thou desist from the one, seeing thou canst cunningly dissemble the other." (p. 221) (2)
284. "But alas Euphues, what truth can there...trauayler?" (p. 222)
285. "...what stay in a stranger?" (p. 222)
286. "whose words & bodies both watch but for a winde, whose..." (p. 222) (2)
287. "...whose feete are euer fleeting whose fayth plighted..." (p. 222)
288. "...both these daughters to great Princes, both they vnfaythfull of promisses..." (p. 222)
289. "...a sweete poyson in a paynted potte..." (p. 222)
290. "...to swallow the bayte which will breede thy bane?" (p. 222)
291. "To swill the drinke that will expire thy date?" (p. 222)
292. "To desire the wight that will worke thy death?" (p. 222)
293. "...or with beautie lyue in all brauerie..." (p. 222)
294. "...thou pretende faihte in thy words, thou deuisest fraude in thy heart." (p. 222)
295. "...thou seem to prefer loue, thou art inflamed with lust." (p. 222)
296. "...I chewed the leafe cresse which mainteineth modestie..." (p. 222)
297. "Though thou beare in thy bosome the hearbe..." (p. 222)
298. "...thus hastely to deuine of your disposition, pardon..." (p. 222)
299. "...of others in the flames of fancie,..." (p. 222)
300. "Though I as yet neuer tryed any faithles, wherby I should be fearefull..." (p. 222)
301. "...which causeth me to be carefull..." (p. 223)
302. "Alas we silly soules..." (p. 223)
303. "...neyther crafte to trayne in young louers, neither courage to withstande..." (p. 223)
304. "...neyther discretion to discerne their dubling,..." (p. 223)
305. "...neither hard hearts to reiect...beholde simplicitie intrapped by subtilytie,..." (p. 223)
306. "...and those that haue most might, to be infected with most mallice." (p. 223)
307. "The Spider weaueth a fine webbe to hang the Fly, the Wolfe weareth a..." (p. 223)



303. "...laying baytes for women, which are the weaker vessells:..." (p. 223)
309. "...stande at the gaze, if they smell a sweete apple,..." (p. 223)
310. "...if that women beeing as weake as sheepe, be..." (p. 223)
311. "...if the wilde Deare...the tame Damzell,,if the fleete Dolphin..." (p. 223)
312. "But follye it were for mee to marke their mischiefes,..." (p. 223)
313. "...mee rather to shew what our sexe should doe,..." (p. 223)
314. "...which hath euer his house on his head." (p. 224)
315. "I meane so to mortifie myselfe that in stead of silkes I will weare sackecloth,..." (p. 224) (2)
316. "But yet I am not so senceless altogether to reiect your ser- uice:..." (p. 224)
317. "And what greater triall can I haue of thy simplicitie & truth, ...triall." (p. 224)
318. "I, but in the coldest flinte there is hotte fire,..." (p. 224)
319. "...the Bee that hath honny in hir mouth, hath..." (p. 224)
320. "...that beareth the sweetest fruite, hath a sower sappe,..." (p. 224)
321. "...me of rigour, in that I seeke to asswage thy folly by reason, ..." (p. 224)
322. "...accompt me thy friend, for thy foe I will neuer be." (p. 224)
323. "...such sweete meate, such sower sauce, such faire..." (p. 224)
324. "...him in this pitifull plight..." (p. 224)
325. "...wringing him softely with a smiling countenaunce..." (p. 224)
326. "...a smiling countenaunce began thus to comfort him." (p. 224)
327. "...is your minde on your meat? a penny..." (p. 224)
328. "Well then Euphues (sayd shee) so it is that..." (p. 225)
329. "...I conceiue of thy loyaltie and the...lyke...loue,..." (p. 225)
330. "...I am that it will euery way worke my comforte." (p. 225)
331. "...or thine owne safetie, vse such secrecie in this matter..." (p. 225)
332. "...so vndermine mine olde father as quickly I will enjoy my new friend." (p. 225)
333. "...I force not Philautus his fury, so I may haue Euphues his friendship,..." (p. 225)
334. "...neither will I prefer his possessions before thy person,..." (p. 225)
335. "...esteeme better of his lands then of thy loue." (p. 225)
336. "I giue thee my hande in pawne and my heart for euer..." (p. 226)

337. "...my loue before thine owne lyfe?" (p. 226)
338. "how might I excell thee in courtesie, whome no mortall crea-  
ture can excede in constancie?" (p. 226)
339. "I finde it nowe for a settled truth,...for a vaine talke,..."  
(p. 226)
340. "...dye will neuer staine, that the pure Cyuet will neuer  
loose his sauour,..." (p. 226)
341. "...that beautie can neuer be blotted with discourtesie:..."  
(p. 226)
342. "Commaund Euphues to runne, to ride, to..." (p. 226)
343. "...that you smile at some pleasaunt shift, either hee is slow..."  
(p. 226)
344. "...such is the fulnesse and force of pleasure,..." (p. 227)
345. "...yet knowinge that delayer bringe daungers, althoughe..."  
(p. 227)
346. "...yet feared hee the ficklenesse of olde men,..." (p. 227)
347. "...as thou hast longe tyme lyued a mayden, so nowe thou must  
learne..." (p. 227)
348. "...are no sooner borne, but they begin to bride it:" (p. 227)
349. "...to deserue thy loue, and an Italian borne to enioye my  
landes." (p. 227)
350. "...of comely personage, borne and brought vp in..." (p. 227)
351. "...where loue hathe so longe bene settled." (p. 227)
352. "...I am here come to finishe the contract..." (p. 227)
353. "...by giuinge handes, whiche you...by ioyning of hearts..."  
(p. 227)
354. "Lucilla abashed with this sodeine speach of hir father,..."  
(p. 228)
355. "...to loath the sower sauce which is mixed..." (p. 228)
356. "...which is mixed with matrimony...being a maiden, maketh me  
to shun...to a mother..." (p. 228)
357. "...neither am I so wedded to the worlde that I should be...so  
bewitched with wantonnesse,..." (p. 228)
358. "...so proude to desire one of noble progenie, or so precise to  
choose..." (p. 228)
359. "As loue knoweth no lawes, so it regardeth..." (p. 228)
360. "...mee his wyfe before hee woe mee, certeinely..." (p. 228)
361. "...bicause hee reconeth without hys hostesse." (p. 228)
362. "...vp the light strawe, yet can it not take vp the pure steele..."  
(p. 228)
363. "...to winne his louer, yet shall hee not obtaine Lucilla..."  
(p. 228)
364. "...and that the woeing should bee a day after the weddinge..."  
(p. 228)

365. "...might gather some presumption of my loue, but no promise:"  
(p. 228)
366. "...as there can bee no bargaine, where both be not agreede,..."  
(p. 223)
367. "...no marriage made where no match was ment..." (p. 229)
368. "...my selfe to be coy, seeing I am claimed for a wife, bicause  
I haue bene courteous,..." (p. 229)
369. "...began to sift his daughter with this deuice." (p. 229)
370. "Lucilla thy colour sheweth thee to be in a greate choler,..."  
(p. 229)
371. "...seeinge all my talke was onelye to trye thee," (p. 229)
372. "...I am neyther so vnnaturall to wreaste..." (p. 229)
373. "...to wreaste thee against thine owne will, neyther...to wedde  
thee to any,..." (p. 229)
374. "...what streife, what stormes ensue,..." (p. 229)
375. "...where the matche is made rather by the..." (p. 229)
376. "...neyther doe I like thee lesse, in that thou lykest Philau-  
tus so little, neyther can Philautus loue thee the worse,..."  
(p. 229)
377. "...rather to stande to thy chaunce, then to the choyse of any  
other." (p. 229)
378. "...almost vowed to the vayne order of the vestall virgins..."  
(p. 229)
379. "...bandes of Iuno hir bedde." (p. 230)
380. "...nowe bene borne to bee of this minde to bee..." (p. 230)
381. "...waye wyth thy self what slender..." (p. 230)
382. "...what greate griefe..." (p. 230)
383. "...cut downe for fuell, bycause it beareth no good fruite,"  
(p. 230) (2)
384. "...any care to bee a comforte to mye hoary haires, or a commo-  
ditye to thy common weale,..." (p. 230) (2)
385. "...sanctified in Paradise, allowed of the Patriarches, hallowed  
of the olde Prophetes, and commended of all persons." (p. 230)
386. "If hee bee base thy bloude wyll make hym noble,..." (p. 230)
387. "...of thy desire, which will be partaker of thy dysese, yea,...  
of thy delights,..." (p. 230)
389. "...and a furtherer of thy delights, as farre as either my friendes,  
or my landes,..." (p. 230)
390. "...or my landes, or my life will stretch." (p. 230)
391. "...of the olde Foxe hir Father,..." (p. 230)
392. "...wayed with hir selfe what was beste...not wayinge hir Fathers  
yll wyll," (p. 230)
393. "Deere Father Ferardo, althoughe I see the bayte you laye to  
catche me, yet I am content..." (p. 230) (2)

394. "...that hath battered the bulwarke of my breste,..." (p. 231)
395. "What his wealth is I...nor waye it, what his wit is all..." (p. 231)
396. "...but those that bee bredde of the Eagle, neyther any Hawke soare so hie as the broode of the Hobbie,..." (p. 231) (2)
397. "And I hope Philautus wyll not bee my foe, seeinge I haue chosen his deere friende, neither you Father..." (p. 231)
398. "You neede not muse that I shoulde so sodeinely..." (p. 231)
399. "...Biblis of hir brother,..." (p. 231)
400. "...presently to graunt my good will, so meane..." (p. 231)
401. "...I am content to leaue my sute, by how much the more...seruice," (pp. 231-2)
402. "...and loath hir company, whose countenaunce I haue..." (p. 232)
403. "...O counterfayte companion, couldst thou vnder the shewe of a stedfast friende cloake the mallice of a mortall foe?" (p. 232) (3)
404. "Is thy Livia tourned to thy Lucilla, thy loue to my louer..." (p. 232)
405. "Is this the curtesie of Athens, the cauillying of schollers, the craft of Grecians?" (p. 232)
406. "Is it not commonly saide of Grecians that crafte commeth to them..." (p. 232)
407. "Why then did his pretended curtesie bewitch thee with such credulytie?" (p. 232)
408. "bicause I was content to be his friende, thought he mee meete to be made his foole?" (p. 232) (2)
409. "I see now that as the fish Scolopidus in the floud Araris at the waxinge of the Moone is as white as the driuen snow, and at the wayning as blacke as the burnt coale,..." (p. 232) (3)
410. "...canst thou be so lyght of loue, as to chaunge with euery winde?" (p. 232)
411. "Ah well I wotte that a newe broome sweepeth..." (p. 232)
412. "...changed all hir olde golde for new glasse,..." (p. 232)
413. "...fruite of my desire be tourned to disdayne?" (p. 232)
414. "...seene thee willying to be wonne, he would neuer haue woed thee,..." (p. 232)
415. "Yet although they haue founde me dull in pereiuing their falshood, they shall not finde me...their folly." (p. 233)
416. "...lesse witte then I was wont,..." (p. 233)
417. "...it be sweet in the smell, is sower in the smacke,..." (p. 233)
418. "...yet the siroppe depriueth sight,..." (p. 233)
419. "...hast wonne a fickle Lady, so hast thou lost a faythfull friende." (p. 233)

420. "...neuer bene any faithles to his friend, that hath not also bene fruitelesse to his God." (p. 233)
421. "...I waye this trechery the lesse, in that...is no trothe." (p. 233)
422. "...yet God who permitteth no guyle to be guyltlesse,..." (p. 233)
423. "...haue no pollycie to vndermine thee, yet thine owne practises will..." (pp. 233-4)
424. "...for the loue of a fruitelesse pleasure, vyolate the league of faythfull friendshippe?" (p. 234)
425. "...lookes of a lewd wenche, then the entyre loue of a loyall friende?" (p. 234)
426. "If thou diddest determine with thy selfe at the firste to be false,..." (p. 234) (2)
427. "...did delyght thee, why diddest thou breake..." (p. 234)
428. "...which smelleth most sweete when it is..." (p. 234)
429. "...which is sweeter in the still then on the stalk?" (p. 234)
430. "But thou Euphues, dost rather resemble the Swallow which in the Summer..." (p. 234) (2)
431. "...out of the faire flower doth leaue it & loath it,..." (p. 234) (2)
432. "...in the finest webbe doth hang the fairest Fly." (p. 234)
433. "...that the craft in betraying me, shall any whit coole my courage in reuenging thy villany?" (p. 234)
434. "...for his tenne yeares warre endured ten yeares woe, that after all his strife he wan but a Strumpet,...but a straggeler:..." (p. 234) (2)
435. "...Menelaus care, then my selfe his conquest,..." (p. 234)
436. "...that thou mayst be measured vnto with the lyke measure that thou hast meaten..." (p. 235)
437. "...may deeme it no dishonestie to deceiue thee,..." (p. 235)
438. "...so she may make it a mocke to forswear..." (p. 235)
439. "...see the troubles, & feele the torments which..." (p. 235)
440. "...thee as hopelesse, as my selfe is haplesse,..." (p. 235)
441. "...his talke at naughte and aunswering his taunts in these gibing tearmes." (p. 235)
442. "...Aiax boasted in the feats of armes, yet Vlysses bare away..." (p. 235)
443. "...thou crake of thine own courage, thou mayst easely lose the conquest." (p. 235)
444. "...thou hauing lost thy louer beginnest..." (p. 235)
445. "...and for the loue of a Lady to violate and breade the bands of amitie." (p. 235) (2)
446. "...it is common so it is of course,..." (p. 235)

447. "...as it is seldome so is it sincere,..." (p. 235)
448. "...proceedeth of the similitude of manners, y<sup>e</sup> other of the sinceritie of the heart:" (pp. 235-6)
449. "...of folly in leauing thee to loue Lucilla,...him of foolishnesse..." (p. 236) (2)
450. "...leaueth to leauell his shoot..." (p. 236)
451. "Loue knoweth no lawes:..." (p. 236)
452. "...onelye for the loue of those he lusted after?" (p. 236)
453. "...he had to heale hys disease?" (p. 236)
454. "...no scorne to become beastes, to obtayne their best beloued,..." (p. 236)
455. "...dissemble in loue, is not worthy to liue." (p. 236)
456. "I am of this minde, that both might and mallice,..." (p. 236)
457. "...may lawfully be committed in loue, which is lawlesse." (p. 236)
458. "...arguest Lucilla of lyghtnesse, thy will hangs in the lyghte of thy witte:" (p. 236)
459. "Tush Philautus sette thy heart at rest, for thy happe..." (p. 236)
460. "As Lucilla was caught by frawde so shall she be kept by force,..." (p. 236)
461. "...to espye my crafte, so I thinke thou...my courage,..." (p. 236)
462. "...vppon thy wish, thou shalt neuer lyue to see my woe, or to haue thy wil, and so farewell." (p. 236)
463. "...am I well pleased at your presence, the one..." (p. 237)
464. "...the fact, but also to make amends for my faulte:..." (p. 237)
465. "...if of any new motion or minde to forsake your new friend, I am rather..." (p. 237) (2)
466. "...to confesse hir folly, aunswered him with this frumpe." (p. 237)
467. "...feare reuenge, as for feruent loue,..." (p. 238)
468. "...suffice thee that thou know I care not for thee." (p. 238)
469. "...to blaze thy loialtie, but now my...me a lyer, and thee a light huswife." (p. 238)
470. "...to worke some mischiefe, although I nothing feare your mallice:..." (p. 238)
471. "...you a lyar for praising me, may also deeme you a letcher for ..." (p. 238)
472. "...iudgeth mee light in forsaking of you, may thincke thee as lewde in louing of me,..." (p. 238)
473. "...for thou that thoughtest it lawfull..." (p. 238)
474. "...I was made thy stale, and Philautus thy laughinge stocke:"

(p. 238)

475. "...spend your winde in wast for your welcome is but small,"  
(p. 238)
476. "...hence foorth you neither sollicite this suite neither offer  
any way your seruice,..." (p. 238)
477. "...to Philautus in wealth, nor to thee in wit, neither in  
birth to the worst..." (p. 238)
478. "Well Lucilla (aunswered Euphues) this case breedeth my sorrowe  
the more, in that it is so sodeine,..." (p. 239)
479. "...if tract of time, or want of tryall had caused this Meta-  
morphosis my griefe had bene more tollerable,..." (p. 239)
480. "...encreaseth my sorrowe and thy shame." (p. 239)
481. "...for a little corne, and angle for the fishe that is already  
caught." (p. 239) (2)
482. "...is he that hath my loue at his pleasure, and shall also haue  
my life..." (p. 239)
483. "...no wight worthy to embrace,..." (p. 239)
484. "...if brute beastes giue vs ensamples...we are best beloued,"  
(p. 239)
485. "...for time maye so tourne that once..." (p. 239)
486. "...as one hathe holde of hir taile, will slippe out of his  
hand,..." (p. 239)
487. "...at euery baite but neuer biting:..." (p. 239)
488. "If Curio bee the person, I would neither wishe thee a greater  
plague, nor him a deadlier poyson." (p. 240)
489. "...an innocent borne, a begger by misfortune,..." (p. 240)
490. "...thy heauenly hewe,..." (p. 240)
491. "...be fish or flesh, and certes..." (p. 240)
492. "Cornelia loued a Miller, and thou a miser,..." (p. 240)
493. "...can hir folly excuse thy fault?" (p. 240)
494. "Shall the lewdenesse of others animate thee in thy light-  
nesse?" (p. 240)
495. "...should flye y<sup>e</sup> like impudencie, not follow the..." (p. 240)
496. "...nursed in Naples, farewell Naples..." (p. 240)
497. "...stomacke hunger yet thy heart will not suffer thee to eate."  
(p. 240)
498. "...is neyther fayth nor feruencie?" (p. 240)
499. "...hardlye finde againe, a faythfull friende." (p. 241)
500. "...thee to haue eaten salt...then sugar with the courtiers of  
Italy?" (p. 241)
501. "...my lyfe in the lappes of Ladyes, my lands..." (p. 241)
502. "...with a woman whose wordes seeme feruent, whose heart is con-  
gealed into harde yce, least trusting their outwarde talke, he



- be betrayed with their inwarde trechery." (p. 241) (2)
503. "...to lyue with faire lookes." (p. 241)
504. "...to follow my former lyfe." (p. 241)
505. "...the mallice of man may be abused." (p. 242)
506. "Euen so the greatest wickedness is drawne out of the greatest wit, if it bee abused by will,...world, or inueigled with women." (p. 242)
507. "...yet beeing burnte in the fire shyneth brighter,..." (p. 242)
508. "...with the canker of his owne conceite,..." (p. 242)
509. "...sweete in the nosethrilles of all young nouises." (p. 242)
510. "...to the worlde, meaning rather to macerate my selfe with melancholye..." (p. 242)
511. "...fancye, or with musing to renue his ill fortune, or recant his olde follyes." (p. 242)
512. "...to exhorte Lucilla from the loue of Curio...lykinge of Philautus." (p. 242)
513. "...with watrye eyes, and a wofull heart,..." (p. 242)
514. "...that my hoary haires..." (p. 243)
515. "...neither the nature of a child, neyther the nurture of a mayden,..." (p. 243)
516. "...my youthe in the courte, or thou in thy cradle,..." (p. 243)
517. "...bene borne, or thou neuer bredde." (p. 243)
518. "...for duetie, mallitious desperatenesse, for filiall feare?" (p. 243) (2)
519. "I perceiue now that the wise Paynter saw more then y<sup>e</sup> foolish parent can, who paynted..." (p. 243)
520. "...going downeward, saying it might well descend,..." (p. 243)
521. "...the father of fiftie children, had..." (p. 243)
522. "...nor credite in his countray." (p. 243)
523. "...euer faithfull to Philautus or neuer faithlesse...more fickle to..." (p. 243)
524. "As thy beautie hath made thee blaze of Italy,..." (p. 244)
525. "...lesse fayre or more fortunate, eyther..." (p. 244)
526. "Shall thine olde father lyue to see thee...foole?" (p. 244)
527. "...to disherit my daughter, and yet it will suffer thee to dishonour thy father." (p. 244)
528. "...to see thee florishe in thy youth, and is it thine, to see me fade in mine age?" (p. 244)
529. "...thee prosper, & thou to see me perish." (p. 244)
530. "And shal my louing care be cause of thy wicked crueltie?" (p. 244)
531. "...to see Fathers too fonde, and children to frowarde." (p. 244)



532. "Well Lucilla the teares which thou seest trickle down..." (p. 244)
533. "...or care of a friende, or courtesie of a straunger, or feelinge of a Christian, or...creature,..." (p. 244)
534. "...thy Father of gryefe, and acquite thy selfe of vngratefulnesse,..." (p. 244)
535. "...that maketh the man." (p. 245)
536. "If therefore my delight bee the cause of your death, I thincke my sorrowe would bee an occasion of your solace." (p. 245) (2)
537. "...that my pleasure breede your paine,..." (p. 245)
538. "...wyth my choice, or let me stand to the maine chaunce,..." (p. 245)
539. "...leauing Lucilla the onely heire of his landes,..." (p. 245)
540. "...in a muse what it should bee, then in a maze..." (p. 245)
541. "...his fellowe, yet seeinge hir ficklenesse,...hir follye, and pittie his friendes misfortune." (p. 245)
542. "...that the lightnesse of Lucilla enticed Euphues to so great liking." (p. 245)
543. "...hauing conference betweene themselues, castinge..." (p. 245)
544. "...noting disloyaltie in the demeanor of Lucilla,..." (p. 245)
545. "...place seuered, yet the coniunction...seperated, by the... of soyle." (p. 246)
546. "...gyue thee my hand and my heart,..." (p. 246)
547. "...a coolinge carde for Philautus,..." (p. 246)
548. "...fitte to continue our friendshippe, or of greater force to dissolue our follye,..." (p. 246)
549. "...bene so tormented, that I haue lost my time, thou so troubled ..." (p. 246)
550. "...this trifle, she will straight proclaime...traytour, and... tourne my tippet..." (p. 246)
551. "...as colde as a clock,..." (p. 247)
552. "...is content to bee crauen and crye creeke, though Curio..." (p. 247)
553. "...in the weeting, then wast in the wearing." (p. 247)
554. "...in Venus campe, sworne to the crewe, true to the crowne, knight marshall to Cupid,..." (p. 247)
555. "...of pleasure, an ounce of payne, for euery inche of mirth, an ell of moane." (p. 247) (2)
556. "...of honnye a gallon of gall,..." (p. 247)
557. "...fredome by folly, would..." (p. 247)
558. "...would also lose his lyfe for loue, lette him..." (p. 247)
559. "...his flames or asswage his furye,..." (p. 247)
560. "...to seeke a medicine, as you wer eager...mischiefe:" (p. 247)

561. "...to delyght the people, as Hemlocke to endaunger the patient,  
..." (p. 247)
562. "If my lewde lyfe Gentlemen haue..." (p. 247)
563. "...as well heale as hurte, the Scorpion though he sting, yet  
he stints y<sup>e</sup> paine,..." (p. 247) (2)
564. "...with the Hare and holde with the Hounde,..." (p. 247)
565. "...to flatter men as altogether faultlesse, neyther to fall..."  
(p. 247)
566. "...be not peruerse they shall reape profite, by remedye of  
pleasure." (p. 248)
567. "...lest it stiffle thee, rather fast then surfette, rather  
starue then striue to exceede." (p. 248)
568. "...the stomacke, the seconde inflame..." (p. 248)
569. "...of loue is pleasaunt, the seconde perilous, the thirde  
pestilent." (p. 248)
570. "...my purpose? nay rather...my pleasure?" (p. 248)
571. "If my Lady yeelde to be my louer is it not lykely she will bee  
an others lemman?" (p. 248)
572. "...if she be a modest matrone my labour is lost." (p. 248)
573. "...of the Vestall Virgins, they haue vowed virginitie, if one  
of Venus..." (p. 248) (2)
574. "...that is fayre, it will...that is fowle..." (p. 248)
575. "...I lyue in loue, seeing alwayes it is a lyfe..." (p. 248)
576. "What other solace then endles shame?" (pp. 248-9)
577. "...be accōpted a Mecocke, a Milkesoppe,..." (p. 249)
578. "Alas fonde foole arte..." (p. 249)
579. "...their babble then thine owne blisse,..." (p. 249)
580. "...the fonder he is, or the foolish Eiesse,..." (p. 249)
581. "...none valyaunt, vnless he be too uenturous?" (p. 249)
582. "...one a dastarde, if he be not desperate, a pinche penny, if  
he be not prodigall, if silente a sotte, if full of wordes a  
foole?" (p. 249) (4)
583. "...all to be clownes, which be no courtiers, and all to be  
...coursers." (p. 249)
584. "...the salue when the sore festereth,..." (p. 249)
585. "...with Frogges in Fraunce,..." (p. 249)
586. "...in tracte of time ouerthrowe so statelye Townes,..."  
(p. 249)
587. "...which creepeth secretly into the minde,...consume the body,  
yea and confound the soule." (p. 249)
588. "...by delayes to preuente daungers,..." (p. 249)
589. "They flatter themselues with a faynting farewell,..." (p. 250)
590. "...neyther their painted protestacions, neyther their deceit-

- full promises,..." (p. 250)
591. "...that the sweet songs of Calipso, were subtill snares..." (p. 250)
592. "...that the Crabbe then catcheth..." (p. 250)
593. "...be most pleasaunt, pretend most trecherie." (p. 250)
594. "...the commendation and singular comelynesse...so couragiously ..." (p. 250)
595. "...hee loathed to looke on the..." (p. 250)
596. "...on the heauenly hewe of..." (p. 250)
597. "...thy counsaile in going to hir,...to continue with hir,..." (p. 250)
598. "Learne of Romulus to refraine from wine,..." (p. 250)
599. "...be it neuer so curious, of Diogenes...so comely." (p. 250)
600. "...of Diogenes to detest women..." (p. 250)
601. "...the sore eye infecteth the sounde, the societie with women breedeth securitie in the soule, and maketh all the sences sencelesse." (p. 250)
602. "Moreouer take this counsaile, as an article of thy Creede,..." (p. 250)
603. "...the first shaft that Cupide shooteth..." (p. 250)
604. "...to finde this for a truth, by mine owne tryall,..." (p. 250)
605. "...vnlike these Abbaie lubbers in my lyfe (though farre vnlike them..." (p. 250)
606. "...in bed till their boanes aked." (p. 251)
607. "Is not the standinge water sooner frozen then the running streame? Is not he that sitteth more subiect to sleepe then he..." (p. 251)
608. "...but weedes if it be not well tilled? That the sharpest wit enclineth onely to wickedness,..." (p. 251)
609. "...bendinge breaketh the bowe,..." (p. 251)
610. "...of loue, wee are resolued into lust." (p. 251)
611. "...vnbende the bowe and quenche the brandes..." (p. 251)
612. "Cupide is a craftie childe..." (p. 251)
613. "...auncient customes, defende thy clientes, enriche thy cofers, and carry credite in thy Countrey." (p. 251)
614. "If lawe seeme loathsome..." (p. 251)
615. "...searche the secretes of phisicke,..." (p. 251)
616. "...gather profite to thy purse, and pleasure..." (p. 251)
617. "That Galen gyueth goods..." (p. 251)
618. "...beate thy braynes about..." (p. 251)
619. "...all thy time, all thy treasure to the attayning of the sacred and sincere knowledge..." (pp. 251-2) (2)
620. "...raine thine affections, restrayne thy lust." (p. 252)

621. "...in a glasse, that all the glorye of man is as the grasse,..." (p. 252)
622. "...a bubble, a blast,..." (p. 252)
623. "...of such shortnesse that David sayth it is but a spanne long, of such sharpness,..." (p. 252)
624. "...comforte for the conscience pined..." (p. 252)
625. "...of thy sweete Sauour." (p. 252)
626. "...to turrnayes, yea, to al tormets rather..." (p. 252)
627. "...to lobiter in loue, & spend thy life in y<sup>e</sup> laps of Ladyes." (p. 252)
628. "...kinde & course of nature?" (p. 252)
629. "...no wit springe in the will of women?" (p. 252)
630. "...in the Winter, thy woodes,..." (p. 253)
631. "...vse hunting or haukeing,..." (p. 253)
632. "...roote out the remembraunce of thy former loue, and repent..." (p. 253)
633. "...thou thy plantes, in that thou departest from thy Pigges nye,..." (p. 253)
634. "...for thy selfe any sleeuelesse..." (p. 253)
635. "...how many myles thou..." (p. 253)
636. "But foolysh & franticke louers,..." (p. 253)
637. "Sowre potions bringe sounde health, sharpe purgations..." (p. 253) (2)
638. "...sharpe purgations make shorte diseases,..." (p. 253)
639. "...will the remedy bee when the reason is espyed,..." (p. 253)
640. "...feruente in case he be not furious?" (p. 254)
641. "...if bolde, blunte, if..." (p. 254)
642. "...to yeelde his ryght to reason." (p. 254)
643. "...hir open mallice, hir dissembled mischiefe." (p. 254)
644. "...so comely call hir counterfaite, be she...crooked." (p. 254)
645. "...a paynted wall, if she be pleasaunt,..." (p. 254)
646. "...their slibber sawces, which bring quesinesse to the stomacke," (p. 254)
647. "...their periwiggs, their payntings,..." (p. 254)
648. "...once robbed of their robes,..." (pp. 254-5)
649. "...the Serpents then Saynts,..." (p. 255)
650. "Looke in their closets, and there...confections,..." (p. 255)
651. "...a Surgions boxe of sundrye salues,..." (p. 255)
652. "...a Pedlars packe of new fangles." (p. 255)
653. "...their lawnes, their leefekyes, their ruffes, their rings, shew the rather..." (p. 255) (2)
654. "...Cardinals curtisans, then modest Matrones, and more carnally..."

- affected,..." (p. 255) (2)
655. "...to moue thee, yet all of them ioyntly should mortefie-thee." (p. 255)
656. "Moreouer to make thee y<sup>e</sup> more stronger, to striue..." (p. 255) (2)
657. "...these Syrenes, and more subtill to deceiue these tame Serpents,..." (p. 255)
658. "...a fire deuided in twayne burneth slower, a fountayne... lesse force,..." (p. 255)
659. "...weake being bewitched with their wiles that..." (p. 255)
660. "...colde as y<sup>e</sup> hill Caucasus, carry two faces..., couer..." (p. 255)
661. "...flaming fancie with fained ashes,..." (p. 255)
662. "...shew thy selfe sounde..." (p. 255)
663. "...a pleasaunt countenaunce, with a pyned conscience, a payn-ted..." (p. 255)
664. "...by stealth and by stealth slydeth away." (p. 255)
665. "...Fly the places, the parlours, the portalles,..." (p. 256)
666. "...the sighte of hir window, renew the summe of thy sorrow." (p. 256)
667. "Be not curious to curlle thy haire, nor carefull..." (p. 256)
668. "...foolish in framing thy selfe to euery fashion for hir sake." (p. 256)
669. "...their treading on the toe, their vnsauerie toyes." (p. 256)
670. "Let euery one loath his Ladye,..." (p. 256)
671. "...wine, and wantonnesse,..." (p. 256)
672. "...that feedeth a louer as fat as a foole, refraine from all..." (p. 256)
673. "...Take cleere water for stronge wine,..." (p. 256)
674. "...browne bread for fine manchet, beefe and brewys,..." (p. 256) (2)
675. "...for pleasure, paine,..." (p. 256)
676. "...to cure my selfe then to comfort my friend. And seeing the cause that...so colde..." (p. 257)
677. "...a salve as thou wast hastie in seeking a sore." (p. 257)
678. "...gawlded, neither any bee offended vnlesse shee be guiltie." (p. 257)
679. "...this cooling carde to..." (p. 257)
680. "...I bee loath to loose..." (p. 257)
681. "...thee farewell, and flye women." (p. 257)
682. "...bee mistaken of purpose, neyther misconstrued of mallice,..." (p. 257)
683. "...either the simple should suspect me of folly, or the subtill..." (p. 257)

684. "...my faythe shoulde be set downe to finde fauour..." (p. 257)
685. "...and confute the cauils..." (p. 257)
686. "...ben bolde to inuay...so brutish to enuy them all,..." (p. 257)
687. "...so dogged as Diogenes to..." (p. 257)
688. "...so foolish (although of late I haue bene very fantasticall) that...fewe,..." (p. 257)
689. "...hath bene a prodigious Pasiphae,..." (p. 257)
690. "...hath raigned a wicked Isabel, so hath there ruled..." (pp. 257-8)
691. "...a deuoute Debora, though..." (p. 258)
692. "...I haue spoken of the spleene against y<sup>e</sup> slights and subtilties..." (p. 258)
693. "...wight the name of a woman as wel as the..." (p. 258)
694. "...betweene Lais and Lucretia,..." (p. 258)
695. "...one maye loue...he loath..." (p. 258)
696. "...loue the cleere Conduit water, though he..." (p. 258)
697. "...muddie ditch, and weare the precious Diamonde, though he despise..." (p. 258)
698. "...the modest sex of honest maydens, though...vnchast minions." (p. 258)
699. "...I promise such preciseness..." (p. 258)
700. "...y<sup>e</sup> payte of beautie,..." (p. 258)
701. "...earst with loue, although it bee cooled with the deceites of Lucilla, yet will...the loyaltie of some honest Ladye,..." (p. 258)
702. "...with the water of wilynesse, yet will it be...of wisedome." (p. 258)
703. "...or loue mee the worse in that I loath some so much." (p. 259)
704. "...be blasted in y<sup>e</sup> bud,...." (p. 259)
705. "...with the worme, the Walnut tree neuer,..." (p. 259)
706. "...the mint Maister to see the coyner..." (p. 259)
707. "...not that fancie caused him to chaunge, but that the fickle-nesse..." (p. 259)
708. "...a Caueat to all parents, how...a commaundement..." (p. 259)
709. "...what wit can, & will do, if it be well employed,..." (p. 259)
710. "...lesse pleasure to your youthfull...more profite,..." (p. 259)
711. "...the race of a louer, in the other, the reasons of a Philosopher." (p. 259)

### III. Antithesis: Opposition of ideas and/or sound

NOTE: The examples below often contain a series of antithetical ideas. For the purposes of the frequency chart, each series will count as one example.

1. "...whether he were more bound to Nature for..., or to fortune for the encrease of his possessions." (p. 184)
2. "...seeing himself inferiour to none in pleasant conceipts, thought himself superior to al in honest conditions,..." (p. 184)
3. "...that not onely shee proued Fortune counterfaite, but was halfe of that opinion that she hir selfe was onely currant." (p. 184)
4. "...of more wit then weelth, and yet of more wealth then wisdom,..." (p. 184)
5. "...insomuch y<sup>t</sup> he deemed himselfe so apt to all things, that he gaue himself almost to nothing..." (p. 184)
6. "...a blemmish bringeth rather a liking euery way to the eyes, then a loathing any way to the minde." (p. 184)
7. "So likewise in the disposition of y<sup>e</sup> minde, either vertue is ouershadowed with some vice, or vice ouercast with some vertue." (p. 184)
8. "Alexander valiaunt in warre, yet gyuen to wine. Tullie eloquent in his gloses, yet vayneglorious: Salomon wyse, yet to too wanton: ...none more wicked." (p. 184)
9. "The freshest colours soonest fade, the teenest Rasor soonest tourneth to his edge, ...ranne vnto destruction." (pp. 184-5)
10. "[who preferring fancy before friends, & his present humor, before honour to come, ...more pleasant for his tooth." (p. 185)
11. "When parents haue more care how...& leaue them rich executors of goods, & poore executors of godlynes, then is it no meruaile, y<sup>t</sup> the son being left rich by his fathers Will, become retchles by his owne will." (p. 185)
12. "(a place of more pleasure then profite, and yet of more profite then pietie)..." (p. 185)
13. "...rather to bee the Tabernacle of Venus, then the Temple of Vesta." (p. 185)
14. "There was all things necessary and in redinesse that myght eyther allure the minde to luste, or entice the heart to follye, a courte more meete...and meeter for Flora then Diana." (p. 185)
15. "...eyther soake hys purse to reape commoditie, or sooth hys person to wynne credite,..." (p. 186)
16. "...as well the Spider to sucke poyson, of his fine wyt, as the Bee to gather hunny, as well the Drone, as the Doue, ...his game wiselye." (p. 185)
17. "Hee coulde easily discerne Appollos Musicke, from Pan his



Pype, and Venus beautie from Iunos brauerye, and the faith of Laelius, from the flattery of Aristippus,...what countryman am I not?" (p. 186)

18. "...his Eloquent tongue somewhat tauntinge, yet wyth delight, his myrthe wythout measure,...yet pythie," (p. 186)
19. "...for hee well knewe that so rare a wytte woulde in tyme eyther breede an intollerable trouble, or bringe an incomperable Treasure to the common weale:...other he reioysed." (p. 186)
20. "Dyd they not remember that whiche no man ought to forgette,..." (p. 187)
21. "As therefore the yron beeinge hotte receyueth...it beeinge colde for euer, so the...in youth,...in hys age." (p. 187)
22. "...the one beeinge drye, the other moyste:..." (p. 187)
23. "If therefore thy Father...as shee was a happye wyfe,..." (p. 187)
24. "...so that I am enforced to thincke that either thou dyddest want one to giue thee good instructions, or that thy parentes made thee a wanton wyth to much cockeringe, either they were... to bee ill employed." (p. 187)
25. "...if they had bene bothe as good Gardners to keepe their knotte, as they were grafters to brynge foorth such fruite, ...they had mixed threatens wyth faire lookes." (pp. 187-8)
26. "The Lacedemonians were wont to shewe their children drunken men and other wicked men, that by seeinge their filth they might shunne the lyke faulte, and auoyde suche vices when they were at the lyke state,...the meanes of the like excesse." (p. 188)
27. "Thou art heere in Naples a younge sojourner, I an olde senior, thou...dreadinge thy misfortune." (p. 188)
28. "Heere, yea, heere Euphues, maiste thou see not the carued visarde of a lewde woman, but the incarnate visage of a lasciuious wanton,...to rippe so many corses." (p. 189)
29. "Is it not farre better to abhorre sinnes by the remembraunce of others faultes, then by repentaunce of thine owne follies? ...woulde also embrace the other." (p. 189)
30. "Alas Euphues by how much the more I loue the highe climbinge of thy capacitie, by so muche the more I feare thy fall... thou shalt be enchaunted." (p. 189)
31. "Descende into thine owne conscience, and consider wyth thy selfe the greате difference betweene staringe and starke blinde, wit and wisdom, ...but not too venterous." (p. 189)
32. "Let thy attyre bee comely but not costly, thy dyet wholesome but not excessiue,...in thine owne conceipte." (pp. 189-90)
33. "I am neither so suspitious to mistrust your good will, nor so sottishe to mislike your good counsaile,...the other conuince me of folly." (p. 190)
34. "...eyther you gaue too muche credite to the report of others, or to much lybertie to your owne iudgement,...in reiectinge correction." (p. 190)



35. "...that may seeme in your eye odious, which in an others eye may be gracious." (p. 190)
36. "Though all men bee made of one mettall, yet they bee not cast all in one mould, ...consent of y<sup>e</sup> maners." (pp. 190-1)
37. "Though yron be made soft with fire...education can haue no shew, where the excellencie of nature doth beare sway." (p. 191)
38. "The similytude you rehearse of the waxe, argueth your waxinge and melting brayne, and your example of the hotte and harde yron, sheweth in you but colde and weake disposition." (p. 191)
39. "Now whereas you seeme to loue my nature, & loath my nurture, ...you shall augment it." (p. 191)
40. "The silly Mouse will by no manner of meanes be tamed...it will neuer beare sweete apple,..." (p. 191)
41. "That the stone Abeston being once made hotte will neuer be made colde?...or to cause any thinge to striue against nature?" (pp. 191-2)
42. "Doth not Cicero conclude and allowe, that if wee followe and obey Nature, we shall neuer erre?" (p. 192)
43. "Nature was had in such estimation and admiration among the Heathen people, that she was reputed for the onely Goddess in Heauen:...discipline or nurture?" (p. 192)
44. "But lette these sayings passe, as knowne euidently and graunted to be true, which none can or may deny vnlesse he be false, ..." (p. 192)
45. "...they breede more sorrowe and care, then solace and comforte, ..." (p. 192)
46. "...althoughe to you they breede more sorrowe and care,...more happines then heauines:...gentleness." (p. 192)
47. "Eyther you would haue all men olde as you are, or els you haue quite forgotten yt you your selfe were young,...& deuoute aboue measure." (p. 192)
48. "Put you no difference between the younge flourishinge Baye tree, and the olde withered Beeche?...in all pointes vnlike vnto vs." (pp. 192-3)
49. "Seeing therefore we bee repugnaunt eache to the other in nature, woulde you haue vs alyke in qualyties?...and a fresh wounde?" (p. 193)
50. "...shall it therfore follow of necessitie that all y<sup>t</sup> are woad of loue, should be wedded to lust,...shallbe entangled?" (p. 193)
51. "The Sun shineth vppon the dungehill, and is not corrupted, the Diamond lyeth in the fire, and is not consumed,...with lasciuiousnesse." (p. 193)
52. "Is it not common that the Holme tree springeth amidst the Beach? That the Iuie spreadeth vppon the hard stones? That the softe fetherbed breketh the hard blade?" (p. 193)
53. "...or if your moyst braine haue forgot it, you haue learned much and profited nothing." (p. 193)

54. "...and knowing your selfe either too simple to rayse the siege of pollycie, or too weake to resist the assault by prowesse, you deeme me of as lyttle wit as your selfe, or of lesse force, eyther of small capacitie, or of no courage." (p. 193)
55. "In my judgement Eubulus, you shal assone catch a Hare with a Taber, as you shal perswade youth, with your aged & ouerworn eloquence,..." (p. 193)
56. "Neither were you such a Saint in your youth, that abandoning all pleasures, all pastimes, and delyghts,...then to youthly affection." (p. 194)
57. "...which as yet ther was neuer Stoycke so strict, nor Iesuite so supersticious, neyther Votarie so deuout, but would rather allow it in words the follow it in workes, rather talke of it then try it." (p. 194)
58. "...heere I founde you, and heere I leaue you, hauing... reaped lesse profit." (p. 194)
59. "But as y<sup>e</sup> Camelion though hee haue most guttes, draweth least breath,...but I am called hence by my acquaintance." (p. 194)
60. "...who perceiuing that he was more enclined to wantonnesse, then to wisdomes,..." (p. 194)
61. "Seeing thou wilt not buye counsell at the first hande good cheape, thou shalt buye repentaunce at the seconde hande,... and banne thy hard heart." (p. 195)
62. "Ah Euphues little dost thou know that if thy wealth wast, thy wit will giue but small warmth, & if thy wit encline to wilfulnes, that thy wealth will doe thee no great good." (p. 195)
63. "If the one had bene employed to thrift, the other to learning, it had bene harde to coniecture,...to praise in thy self." (p. 195)
64. "Heere ye may beholde gentlemen, how lewdly wit standeth in his owne lyght, howe he deemeth no pennye good siluer but his owne, preferring the blossome before the fruite,...his owne witte before all mens wisdomes." (p. 195)
65. "Neyther is that geason, seeing for the most parte it is proper to all those of sharpe capacitie to esteeme of themselues, as most proper; if one bee harde in conceiuing, they pronounce him a dowlte, if giuen to study, they proclayme him a duns, ...loquitur carnifex." (p. 195)
66. "...althoughe yron the more it is vsed the brighter it is, yet siluer with much wearing...withereth and decayeth." (pp. 195-6)
67. "Besides thys, a fine wytte, a sharp sence, a quick vnderstanding, is able to atteine to more in a moment or a very little space, then a dull and blockish heade in a month,... then the knottie Boxe." (p. 196)
68. "Such is the Nature of these nouises that thincke to haue learning without labour, and treasure without trauayle,...with the harde hammer." (p. 196)
69. "I go not about (gentlemen) to inueigh against wit, for then

I wer witlesse,...then in any way to tourne to Apostacie:"  
(p. 196)

70. "All which humors are by somuch the more easier to bee purged, by howe much the lesse they haue festred the sinnewes:..."  
(p. 196)
71. "...whether he were moued by the courtesie of a young gentleman named Philautus, or inforced by destenie: whether his pregnant wit, or his pleasaunt conceits wrought the greater liking in the mind of Euphues..." (p. 196)
72. "But Euphues shewed such entyre loue towards him, that he seemed to make small accompt of any others..." (pp. 196-7)
73. "...whether the immortall Gods haue bestowed any gift vpon mortall men,..." (p. 197)
74. "in whose bosome thou maist sleepe secure without feare, ...thy mishap his misery, the pricking of thy finger, the percing of his heart." (p. 197)
75. "Not so common as commendable it is...being dead to be alieue." (p. 197)
76. "I will therefore haue Philautus for my pheere, and by so much the more I make my selfe sure to haue Philautus, by how much the more I view in him the liuely Image of Euphues." (p. 197)
77. "...yet whosoeuer shall see this amitie grounded vpon a little affection, will soone coniecture that it shall be dissolued vpon a light occasion:...hot loue waxed soone colde." (p. 197)
78. "For as y<sup>e</sup> best wine doth make y<sup>e</sup> sharpest vinaiger, so y<sup>e</sup> deadliest hate." (p. 197)
79. "that tryall maketh trust, that there is falsehood in fellowship?...of mindes?" (p. 197)
80. "And sithens a long discourse argueth folly, and delicate words incurre the suspition of flattery,...to breede offence." (p. 198)
81. "...whether of th<sup>e</sup> was most to be blamed, but certainly neither of them was blamelesse,..." (p. 198)
82. "I hope the delightfulness of the one, will attenuate the tediousnesse of the other..." (p. 198)
83. "Philautus by how much the lesse hee looked for thys discourse, by so much the more he liked it,...in Euphues,..." (p. 198)
84. "I dare neither vse a long processe, neither louing speach, least vnwittingly I should cause you to cōvince me of those thinges, which you haue alredy condemned." (p. 198)
85. "...seeing the sincere affection of the minde cannot be expressed by the mouth, & that no arte can vnfolde y<sup>e</sup> entire loue of the heart, I am earnestly to beseech you not to measure the firmnesse of my faith, by the fewnes of my wordes,...for many woords." (pp. 198-9)
86. "...in mine opinion if it continued myraculous, if shaken off, ridiculous." (p. 199)
87. "But] After many embracings & protestations...not one to many." (p. 199)

88. "...who although he had a courtly crewe of gentlewomen sojourning in his pallace,...whose modest bashfulnesse caused the other to looke wanne for enuie, whose lillye cheekes dyed with a Uermillion redde made the rest to blushe at hir beautie." (p. 199)
89. "...so this gallant gyrle more faire then fortunate,...their coulours." (p. 199)
90. "Unto hir had Philautus accesse, who wanne hir by right of loue, ....had not Euphues by straunge destenie broken the bondes of marriage, and forbidden the banes of Matrimonie." (p. 199)
91. "Hir father being gon she sent for hir friend to supper, who came not as he was accustomed solitarily alone, but accompanied with his friende Euphues." (p. 200)
92. "Syr as I neuer when I sawe you thought that you came without your shadow, so now I cannot a lyttle meruaile to see you so ouershot in bringing a new shadow w<sup>t</sup> you." (p. 200)
93. "Fayre Lady seing the shade doth often shilde your beautie from the parching Sunne, I hope you will the better esteeme of the shadow, and by so much the lesse it ought to be offenciue, by how much the lesse it is able to offende you,...vse to lye in it." (pp. 200-1)
94. "...whose experience in loue hath made you learned, and whose learning hath made you so louely:...and giue you occasion rather to laught at my rashnesse, then to lyke my reasons." (p. 201)
95. "And since I am at myne owne choyce eyther to talke of loue or of learning, I had...then a Stoicke in renouncing pleasure." (p. 201)
96. "It hath been a question often disputed, but neuer determined, whether the qualities of the mynde, or the composition of the man, cause women...most to loue." (p. 201)
97. "Certes by how much the more the mynde is to be preferred before the body, by so much the more the graces of the one ...the reformed mynde." (pp. 201-2)
98. "Contrarywise if we respect more the outward shape, then the inwarde habit,...a sower poyson in a siluer pottle." (p. 202)
99. "...I should either haue procured your displeasure, or incurred y<sup>e</sup> suspition of frawd,...my self of periury." (p. 202)
100. "The foule Toad hathe a fayre stoane...in the hard shell." (p. 202)
101. "...that they disdaine them most that most desyre them." (p. 202)
102. "But I mean not to offend your chast mynds, w<sup>t</sup> the rehersal of their vnchast manners,..." (pp. 202-3)
103. "...who will lyke of them in their age, who loued none in their youth?" (p. 203)
104. "If you will be cherished when you be olde, be curteous while you be young,...a pleasant Grape,..." (p. 203)
105. "And in this poynt I meane not to be mine owne caruer, least I should seeme eyther to picke a thanke with men, or a quarrel with women." (p. 203)

106. "How so euer the matter shall fall out, I am of the surer syde, for if my reasons be weake, then is our sexe stronge,... you must yelde to men." (p. 204)
107. "Touching the yelding to loue, albeit theyr hartes seeme tender, yet they harden them lyke the stone of Sicilia,...them to vn-cleaneenesse,..." (p. 204)
108. "When they see the folly of men turne to fury, their delight to doting,...faythlesse for resisting their fylthinesse." (p. 204)
109. "...my tale will be acc<sup>o</sup>pted a meere trifle, & your words y<sup>e</sup> plain truth;..." (p. 204)
110. "And I would y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen here present wer as ready to credit my prooffe, as y<sup>e</sup> gentlewomen are willing to heare their own prayses,..." (p. 204)
111. "Ah wretched wench Lucilla how art thou perplexed? what a doubtfull fight dost thou feelee betwixt faith and fancie? ...and concupiscence?" (p. 205)
112. "And canst thou Lucilla be so light of loue in forsaking Philautus to flye to Euphues?...before thy companion?" (p. 205)
113. "Why Euphues doth perhappes desyre my loue, but Philautus hath deserued it...hath deeper affection." (p. 205)
114. "Ah fonde wench, dost thou thincke Euphues will deeme thee constant to nim, when thou hast bene vnconstant to his friende? ...thyne honestie in question?" (p. 205)
115. "...that the cloath which staineth with Mylke, will soone loose his colour with vineger,...faythfull to any." (p. 205)
116. "For as the Bee that gathereth Honny out of the weede, when she espyeth the faire flower flyeth to the sweetest; or as the kynde spanyell...is to be commended." (p. 206)
117. "Is not the Dyamonde of more valewe then the Rubie,...then thine owne talke?" (p. 206)
118. "It is not my desire, but his desertes that moueth my mynde to this choyse,...one to the other." (p. 206)
119. "If thou haste belyed women, he will iudge thee vnkynde,... when thou art wedded." (p. 206)
120. "But suppose that Euphues loue thee, that Philautus leaue thee, will thy father thingkest thou giue thee libertie to lyue after thyne owne lust?...y<sup>e</sup> minde is peerelesse?" (pp. 206-7)
121. "Time hath weaned me from my mothers teat, and age ridde me from my fathers correction,...of their parents." (p. 207)
122. "No, no, mine owne loue I should have sayd, for I am...as I am to folly." (p. 207)
123. "But were I once certaine of Euphues good will,...fathers ill will." (p. 207)
124. "And I hope so to behaue my selfe as Euphues shall thinke me his owne, and Philautus perswade himselfe I am none but his." (p. 207)
125. "...that he neyther coulde comforte himselfe nor durst aske

- counsel of his friend, suspecting that which in deede was true,  
...or the lyke speaches." (pp. 207-8)
126. "O ye gods haue ye ordayned for euerye maladye a medicine,  
for euery sore a salve,...then with reasonable creatures."  
(p. 208)
127. "Ah well I perceiue that loue is not vnlyke the Figge tree,  
whose fruite is sweete, whose roote is more bitter then the  
claw of a Bitter,...sower then gall." (p. 208)
128. "The filthy Sow when she is sicke,...and is healed." (p. 208)
129. "But why goe I about to hinder...maketh it to flame fiercer?"  
(pp. 208-9)
130. "The ratling thunderbolte hath but his clappe, the lyghteninge  
but his flash,...ende in a minute." (p. 209)
131. "Ah my Lucilla, wold thou wert either lesse faire...both of  
one minde." (p. 209)
132. "But how should she be perswaded of my loyaltie, that yet had  
neuer one simple prooffe of my loue?...y<sup>t</sup> is violent?" (p. 209)
133. "...yes, yes, she must needs coniecture so, although it be  
nothing so, for by how much y<sup>e</sup> more my affection cometh on y<sup>e</sup>  
suddaine, by so much the lesse will she thinke it certeyne."  
(p. 209)
134. "Shall I not then hazarde my lyfe to obtaine my loue? and de-  
ceiue Philautus to receiue Lucilla?" (p. 209)
135. "If therefore the Gods haue endewed hir with as much bountie  
as beautie. If she haue no lesse wit then she hath comely-  
nesse,...for louing so hastely." (p. 209)
136. "And canst thou wretch be false to him that is faithfull to  
thee?...els to loose?" (pp. 209-10)
137. "Who so is blinded with the caule of beautie, decerneth no cou-  
lour of honestie...a slippery prancke?" (p. 210)
138. "Is it not the praye that entiseth the theefe to ryfle? Is it  
not the pleasaunt bayte, that causeth y<sup>e</sup> fleetest fish to  
bite?...that he coulde not?" (p. 210)
139. "But O my Lucilla, if thy hearte be made of that stone which may  
bee mollyfied onely with bloud,...which taketh away sight."  
(p. 210)
140. "If Lucilla be so proude to disdayne poore Euphues, woulde  
Euphues were so happye to denye Lucilla, or...to lyue in hate."  
(p. 210)
141. "...and shee of rygor to punishe hys follye in hir owne fleshe,  
...than a Matron of Rome." (p. 211)
142. "Penelope no lesse constaunt then shee, yet more wyse,...  
not come home the sooner." (p. 211)
143. "Friend and fellow, as I am not ignoraunt of thy present weak-  
nesse, so I am not priue of thy cause,...my selfe of no one  
thing." (p. 211)
144. "Thou hast hetherto found me a cheerefull companion in thy  
mirth, and nowe shalt thou finde me as careful wyth thee in thy

moane." (p. 211)

145. "True it is Philautus that he which toucheth y<sup>e</sup> nettle tenderly, is soonest stoung, y<sup>t</sup> the Fly which plaieth with y<sup>e</sup> fire...lesse happy he is." (p. 212)
146. "If there be any thing that either by my friends may be procured, or by my life attained,...by getting a kingdome." (p. 212)
147. "Thou hast tried me, therefore trust mee,...in this one thing." (p. 212)
148. "I neuer yet failed, and now I will not fainte...as procrastinatio<sup>n</sup>." (p. 212)
149. "Ah Liuia, Liuia, thy courtly grace w<sup>t</sup>out coyne, ...to be accompted the lesse." (pp. 212-13)
150. "Doubtlesse if euer she hir self haue been scorched...conuerted into phrensie..." (p. 213)
151. "...which may cause me either to purge my new disease, or recouer my hoped desire." (p. 213)
152. "...that either thou wilt be too bold to practise, or my body too weake to purge." (p. 213)
153. "But seeing a desperate disease is to be cōmitted to a desperate Doctor,...into thy handes." (pp. 213-14)
154. "In that thou hast made me priuie to thy purpose, I will not conceale my practise,...of the one or the other." (p. 214)
155. "Touchinge our accesse bee thou secure,...entreated to leaue it." (p. 214)
156. "As olde men are very suspitious to mistruste euerye thinge, so are they verye credulous to beleue any thinge,...many a Fly:..." (p. 214)
157. "Concerning Liuia though shee bee faire, yet is shee not so amiable as my Lucilla,...will immediatly goe to them." (p. 214)
158. "Liuia is a wench of more witte then beautie, Lucilla...wyth any of them both." (p. 214)
159. "And by so much the more you are welcome by how much the more you were wished for." (p. 215)
160. "The eye that blinded thee, shall make thee see...let vs goe!..." (p. 215)
161. "Philautus and Euphues repaired to the house of Ferardo, where ...stayed hir wisdome." (p. 215)
162. "Euphues nowe as willing to obey as shee to commaunde,...as followeth." (p. 216)
163. "As there is no one thing which can be reckoned either concerning loue or loyaltie wherin women do not excell men,...then emulate them." (p. 216)
164. "What coulde Adam haue done in his Paradise before his fall ...after his fall without a woeman?" (p. 216)
165. "For as they be harde to be wonne without tryall of greate faith, so are they hard to be lost...it neuer looseth his sauour." (p. 216)

166. "I for mine own part am brought into a Paradise by the onely imagination of woemens vertues, and...in heauen, I woulde liue more stricktly for feare of hell." (p. 216)
167. "...the onely steele glasse for man to beholde hys infirmities, by comparinge them wyth woemens perfections..." (p. 217)
168. "...for as the sunne when he is at the highest beginneth to goe downe so when the prayses of women are at the best, if you leaue not, they wyll beginne to fayle,..." (p. 217)
169. "...yet my retourne I hope will bee so short that my absence shall not breede thy sorrowe..." (p. 217)
170. "Are they not more gentle...madde for loue, and woemen so wyse that they detest lust." (p. 217)
171. "...lyke to infect women with pride, which yet they haue not, and men with spyte whyche yet I woulde not." (p. 217)
172. "...to take this hastye warninge for a hartye welcome..." (p. 217)
173. "...beeing so little, I am afraide my credite will bee lesse, for that they commonly are soonest beleued, that are best beloued, and they liked best,..." (p. 218)
174. "...I haue founde such flames that I can neither quench them ...neyther coole them wyth wisdom." (p. 218)
175. "For as the Hoppe the poak beeing neuer so hye groweth to the ende, or as the drye Beeche kindled at the roote, neuer..." (p. 218)
176. "...but seeinge women when one praiseth them for their desertes, deeme that hee flattereth them to obtaine his desire,..." (p. 218)
177. "Yet will you cōmonly obiect this to such as serue you...it freeseth in their works:..." (p. 218)
178. "...albeit they be sufficient to reprove the lightnesse of some one, yet can it not conuince euery one...subtiltie of a few." (p. 219)
179. "For although the worme entereth almost into euery woode, yet he eateth not the Cedar tree:...curraunt in his dealinges." (p. 219)
180. "Neyther doth hee desire to bee trusted any way, vntill he shall be tried euery way,...rare perfection,..." (p. 219)
181. "Lucilla although she were contented to heare this desired discourse, yet did shee seeme to bee somewhat displeased..." (p. 219)
182. "And truly I know not whether it bee peculyar to that sex to dissemble with those, whome they...they most loue:..." (p. 219)
183. "yet wisely did she cast this in hir head,...reason and affection, lyfe and death." (pp. 219-20)
184. "Gentleman as you may suspecte me of Idelnesse...of your folly." (p. 220)
185. "Though you came to Naples as a straunger, yet...as a friend." (p. 220)



186. "I haue hetherto God bethancked, liued wythout suspition...all other in beastlynnesse?" (p. 220)
187. "When the Foxe preacheth the Geese perishe...there lyeth a gallying minde." (p. 220)
188. "...that were I not ouer charie of mine honestie,...thy good will." (p. 220)
189. "These subtill shifes, these paynted practises...to the toyes of Venus...Learn thou by me Euphues to dispise things that be amiable, to forgoe delightfull practises, beleue mee it is pietie to abstayne from pleasure." (p. 221)
190. "Thou arte not the first that hath solicited this sute,...neyther hast thou more arte to discouer thy meaninge, but more hearte to open thy minde:..." (p. 221)
191. "...but truely loue thee I cannot, whome I doubte to be my louer." (p. 221)
192. "...eyther therefore dissemble thy fancie, or desist from thy folly." (p. 221)
193. "Although my face cause him to mistrust my loyaltie,...of my firme honestie." (pp. 221-2)
194. "...whose fayth plighted on the shoare, is tourned to periurie when they hoist saile..." (p. 222)
195. "...saying it was a deceiptfull bayte with a deadly hooke, To desire the wight that will worke thy death?" (p. 222)
196. "...that thoughe thou pretende faithe in thy words,...art inflamed with lust." (p. 222)
197. "Though thou haue eaten the seedes of Rockatte,...the vpholder of Chastitie." (p. 222)
198. "Although I my selfe were neuer burnt,...to suspect one vppon probabilyties." (pp. 222-3)
199. "...neither hard hearts to reiect their complaynts, wee I say are soone enticed,..." (p. 223)
200. "The Spider weaueth a fine webbe to hang the Fly...snappeth at the Fly,..." (p. 223)
201. "...that the whole heard of Deare stande at the gaze...Damzell is wonne with a blossome." (p. 223)
202. "...it becommeth mee rather to shew what our sexe should doe, then to open what yours doth." (p. 223)
203. "I would to God Ferardo were in this poynte lyke to Lysander,...for louers Sonettes, Dauids Psalmes." (p. 223)
204. "I, but in the coldest flinte there is hotte fire,...stalke of Iuie." (p. 224)
205. "I woulde not Euphues that thou shouldest condemne...for thy foe I will neuer be." (p. 224)
206. "...such sweete meate, such sower sauce,...such sodaine chaunge..." (p. 224)
207. "And though women haue small force to ouercome men...them by pollycie." (p. 225)

208. "The softe droppes of raine pearce the hard Marble...enjoy my new friend." (p. 225)
209. "Tush Philautus was liked for fashion sake, but...that my father shall sooner martir me in the fire then marry me to Philautus." (p. 225)
210. "...I force not Philautus his fury, so I may haue Euphues his friendship,...It is not his great mannors, but thy good manners, that shall make my marriage." (p. 225)
211. "Ah my Lucilla howe much am I bounde to thee, which...before thine owne lyfe." (p. 226)
212. "I finde it nowe for a settled truth, which earst I accompted ...bee blotted with discourtesie: as touching secrecie in this... it to my selfe." (p. 226)
213. "...either hee is slow in enquiring of your faultes, or you slack in aunswering of his questions,..." (p. 226)
214. "...who after hys repast hauing no opportunitie to conferre wyth his loue, had...hee would come." (p. 226)
215. "But as Ferardo went in poste, so hee retourned in haste,..." (p. 226)
216. "Deere daughter, as thou hast longe tyme lyued a mayden...to make thee a wyfe." (p. 227)
217. "...if thou lyke it, neither canst thou dislike hym, who wanteth nothing...loathing." (p. 227)
218. "And surely I reioyce the more, that thou...longe bene settled." (p. 227)
219. "...God doth witnesse the one in your consciences, so the worlde may testifie the other by your conuersations,..." (p. 227)
220. "Lucilla abashed with this sodeine speach of hir father...hir friend,..." (p. 228)
221. "Reverend Sir, the sweetnesse that I haue...causeth me to loath the sower sauce which is mixed with matrimony,...a maiden,..." (p. 228)
222. "...neyther so bewitched with wantonnesse, that I should bee entised with...of noble progenie,..." (p. 228)
223. "Do wee not see the noble to matche wyth the base, the rich with the poore,...the Portingale?" (p. 228)
224. "And in this Philautus woulde eyther shew himselfe of greate wisdom to perswade,...hee not obtaine Lucilla." (p. 228)
225. "I cannot but smile to heare, that a marriage...a day after the weddinge." (p. 228)
226. "...or if seeinge mee disposed to ieste, he tooke mee in good earnest,...the Bridegrome." (p. 228)
227. "Therefore deere Father in mine opinion as there...in that I haue bene merrie:..." (pp. 228-9)
228. "...forsweare Philautus for my husband, althoughe I accept him for my friende,..." (p. 229)
229. "...where the matche is made rather by the compulsion...consent of the parties,..." (p. 229)

230. "...neyther doe I like thee the lesse, in that thou lykest... of any other." (p. 229)
231. "...that thou art almost vowed to the vayne order of the vestall virgins,...hir bedde." (pp. 229-30)
232. "...what great griefe to theire parentes which ioye most..." (p. 230)
233. "If hee bee base thy bloude wyll make hym noble,...aged Father." (p. 230)
234. "For I had rather thou shouldest leade a lyfe to thine...Apes in Hell." (p. 230)
235. "Neyther doe I loue hym so meanelly...loue hym shamefullye:..." (p. 231)
236. "And I hope Philautus wyll not bee my foe, seeinge I haue chosen his deere friende,...is displaced." (p. 231)
237. "...by so much the more I am content to leaue my sute, by how much the more she seemeth to disdayne my seruice,..." (pp. 231-2)
238. "...and loath hir company, whose countenaunce I haue so much loued,..." (p. 232)
239. "Ah most dissembling wretch Euphues, O counterfayte...thy loue to my louer, thy deuotion to my Sainct?" (p. 232)
240. "...shall my good will bee the cause of his ill wil?...made his foole?" (p. 232)
241. "I see now that as the fish Scolopidus in the floud...become most faythlesse." (p. 232)
242. "...so vnconstant as to preferre a new louer before thine olde friende? Ah well I wotte that a newe...to disdayne?" (p. 232)
243. "But vnless Euphues had inueigled thee thou haddest...bewrayed hir meaning." (pp. 232-3)
244. "Tush why go I about to excuse any of them,, ,them both?" (p. 233)
245. "Yet although they haue founde me dull in...be renewed." (p. 233)
246. "Althoughe Euphues hetherto I haue shrined thee in my heart for a trustie friende, I will shunne thee heerafter as a trothles foe,..." (p. 233)
247. "...that Muske although it be sweet in the smell, is sower... of hir lyghtnesse?" (p. 233)
248. "Howe canst thou assure thy selfe that she will be faithfull to thee, which hath bene faithlesse to mee?" (p. 233)
249. "Thoughe I be to weake to wrastle for a reuenge,...to ouerthrow thee." (pp. 233-4)
250. "Couldst thou Euphues for the loue of a fruitelesse pleasure, vyolate the league of faythfull friendshippe?...thou prayse them?" (p. 234)
251. "But thou Euphues, dost rather resemble the Swallow...doth hang the fairest Fly." (p. 234)

252. "I wish thee rather Menelaus care, then my selfe...hir new pheere Euphues." (pp. 234-5)
253. "Thus hoping shortly to see thee as hopelesse, as my selfe is haplesse,...heartely looked for." (p. 235)
254. "I remember Philautus how valyauntly Ajax boasted in the feats of armes, yet Vlysses bare away the armour,...descry thy crafte." (p. 235)
255. "The friendshippe between man and man as it is common so is it of course, betweene man and woman, as it is seldome...of the heart:..." (pp. 235-6)
256. "But thou canst blame me no more of folly in leauing thee to loue Lucilla, then thou mayst reprove him of foolishnesse that hauing...the fresh Uiolette." (p. 236)
257. "...anye impietie may lawfully be committed in loue, which is lawlesse." (p. 236)
258. "...as for reuenge thou arte not so able to lende a blowe as I to ward it,...the quarrel." (p. 236)
259. "Mistresse Lucilla, although my long absence might breede...to your presence." (p. 237)
260. "...I was neyther angrie with your long absence,...presence,..." (p. 237)
261. "...but I hope that such hot loue cannot be so soone colde...forgetfulnesse." (p. 237)
262. "...neyther doe I craue amends, neyther feare reuenge,...with reason,..." (pp. 237-8)
263. "I haue hearde that women eyther loue entirely or hate deadly, ...of the other." (p. 238)
264. "Such was the hope that I conceiued of thy constancie,...light huswife." (p. 238)
265. "...whosoeuer accompteth you a lyar for praising me,...to be deceiued of thy foe." (p. 238)
266. "...and sithens an other hath won that we both haue lost,..." (p. 238)
267. "...for renouncing Philautus, & choosing thee,..." (p. 238)
268. "...that I am neither wyllinge to receiue it, nor you to bestowe it:..." (p. 239)
269. "...if tract of time, or want of tryall...sorrowe and thy shame." (p. 239)
270. "Euphues (quoth shee) you make a longe haruest for...already caught." (p. 239)
271. "...and although you deeme him vnworthy to enioye that which earst you accompted no wight worthy to embrace,..." (p. 239)
272. "...then am I rather to bee excused then accused." (p. 239)
273. "I for my part thincke him worthy of thee,...so many a Gentleman." (p. 240)
274. "...it is like to fare with thee as with the Eagle, which dyeth

- neither for age, nor with sicknesse, but wyth famine,...to eate." (p. 240)
275. "A foolishe Euphues, why diddest thou leaue Athens...the courtiers of Italy?" (p. 241)
276. "I forsooke mine olde companions to search for new...owne will." (p. 241)
277. "I had thought that women had bene as we men, that is true, faithfull, zealous,...gelousie, inconstancie." (p. 241)
278. "I was halfe perswaded that they were made of the perfection of men, & would be comforters, but now I see they haue tasted of the infection of the Serpent, and will be corasiues." (p. 241)
279. "The Phisition saythe it is daungerous to minister Phisicke vnto the patient that hath a colde stomacke and a hotte lyuer, ...inwarde trechery." (p. 241)
280. "I will so frame my selfe as al youth heereafter shal rather reioice to se mine amendemēt then be animated to follow my former lyfe." (p. 241)
281. "...that I seeme onely to desire them which did onely earst detest them." (p. 241)
282. "If witte be employed in the honest study of...pestilent then witte?" (p. 241)
283. "Doth not y<sup>e</sup> fire (an element so necessarie that without it man cannot lyue) as well burne y<sup>e</sup> house as burne in the house...or inueigled with women." (p. 242)
284. "The Rose though a lyttle it be eaten with the Canker...of all young nouises." (p. 242)
285. "...meaning rather to macerate my selfe...company of Ladyes." (p. 242)
286. "Woulde I had neuer lyued to bee so olde or thou to bee so obstinate, eyther woulde I had dyed in my youthe in the courte, ...neuer bredde." (p. 243)
287. "Is obstinacie payed for obedience, stubbornnesse rendred for duetie, mallitious desperatenesse, for filiall feare?" (p. 243)
288. "...who paynted loue going downward, saying it might well descend, but ascende it coulde neuer." (p. 243)
289. "Danaus whome they reporte to bee the father of fiftie children, had amonge them all but one...and reasonable." (p. 243)
290. "Oh I would thou haddest eyther bene euer faithfull to Philautus, or neuer faithlesse to Euphues...Curio." (pp. 243-4)
291. "As thy beautie hath made thee blaze of Italy, so will thy lyghtnes make thee the bye word of y<sup>e</sup> world...as I from cruel-tie." (p. 244)
292. "Nature will not permitte me to disherit my daughter, and yet it will suffer thee to dishonour thy father...to see me perish." (p. 244)
293. "I made thee a wanton and thou hast made mee a foole,...And shal my louing care be cause of thy wicked crueltye?" (p. 244)

294. "yea, yea, I am not the first that hath bene too careful, nor the last...to frowarde." (p. 244)
295. "...which if thou doe the gaine is mine, and the losse thine..." (p. 244)
296. "Deere Father as you woulde haue mee to shewe the duetie of a childe, so ought you to shewe the care of a parent..." (p. 244)
297. "You would haue me as I owe duetie to you to leaue Curio, and I desire you as you owe mee any loue,...graunt not my petition." (p. 245)
298. "If therefore my delight bee the cause of your death, I thincke my sorrowe would bee an occasion of your solace." (p. 245)
299. "...I had rather leaue them in a muse what it should bee, then in a maze in telling what it was." (p. 245)
300. "...although he began to reioyce at the miserye of his fellowe, yet seeinge hir ficklenesse coulde not but lamente hir follye, ...misfortune." (p. 245)
301. "Philautus was earnest to haue Euphues tarrie in Naples, and Euphues desirous to haue Philautus...by chaunge of soyle." (pp. 245-6)
302. "Musing with my selfe beeing idle howe I myght be well imployed ...our follye,..." (p. 246)
303. "How curious were we to please our Lady, how carelesse to displease our Lord?...God?" (p. 246)
304. "Though Curio bee as hotte as a toast...and crye creeke,..." (p. 247)
305. "...then shall he finde for euery pynte of honnye...an ell of moane." (p. 247)
306. "...in despayre to obtayne his purpose,...by folly,..." (p. 247)
307. "...as will eyther quenche his flames or asswage his furye, ...as most pretious." (p. 247)
308. "...be as earnest to seeke a medicine,...as the Spider to yeeld poyson." (p. 247)
309. "If my lewde lyfe Gentlemen haue...drawne to continencie." (p. 247)
310. "Achilles speare could as well heale as hurte,...many by repen-taunce." (p. 247)
311. "...I meane not to runne with the Hare and holde with the Hounde, to carry fire in the one hande and water in the other,...a quarrell with the other,..." (pp. 247-8)
312. "...not to blow the coales of fancie wyth desire, but to quench them with disdayne." (p. 248)
313. "Though the beginning of loue bring delyght,...destruction." (p. 248)
314. "For as the first draught of wine doth comfort...the thirde pestilent." (p. 248)
315. "What whall I gayne if I obtayne my purpose? nay rather what shall I loose in winning my pleasure?...an others lemman?" (p. 248)

316. "...I must pine in cares, or perish with curses." (p. 248)
317. "If she be chaste...who can woe hir? if a lewde minion, who woulde wedde hir?...vowed dishonestie." (p. 248)
318. "If I loue one that is fayre, it will kindle gelousie, if one that is fowle...me into phrensie." (p. 248)
319. "If fertile to beare children my care is increased, if barren ...of hir lyfe." (p. 248)
320. "To what ende then shall I lyue in loue, seeing slwayes it is a lyfe more to be feared then death?" (p. 248)
321. "But happely thou wilt say if I refuse their courtesie I shal be accopted a Mecocke, a Milkesoppe,...with intollerable glee." (p. 249)
322. "Wilt thou resemble the kinde Spaniell, which the more he is beaten the fonder he is,...neuer away?" (p. 249)
323. "That they accompte one a dastarde,...if silent a sotte, if full of wordes a foole?" (p. 249)
324. "Seeing therefore the very blossome of loue is sower, the budde cannot be sweete." (p. 249)
325. "In time preuent daunger, least...when the maladye is past cure." (p. 249)
326. "What lesse then the grayne of Mustardeseede, in time almost what thing is greater then the stalke thereof?" (p. 249)
327. "The slender twigge groweth to a...the thickest clothe,..." (p. 249)
328. "He that to day is not willying will...more wilfull." (p. 249)
329. "Thinke this with thy selfe, that the sweete songes of Calipso, were subtill snares...pretend most trecherie." (p. 250)
330. "...y<sup>t</sup> hee loathed to looke on the heauenly hewe of Panthea, ...my serious affaires." (p. 250)
331. "...& I would the example of others idlenesse had caused me rather to auoid y<sup>t</sup> fault, then experience of mine owne folly." (p. 250)
332. "...Howe dissolute haue I bene in striuing against good counsayle, howe resolute...correction?" (p. 250)
333. "Neyther was I much vnlike these Abbaie lubbers in my lyfe (though farre vnlike them in beliefe)...boanes aked." (pp. 250-1)
334. "The man beeing idle the...voide of honestie." (p. 251)
335. "Is not the standinge water sooner frozen then the running streame?...if it be not well tilled?" (p. 251)
336. "...the motion of loue, wee are resolued into lust." (p. 251)
337. "Cupide is a craftie childe following those at an ynche that studye pleasure, and flyinge those swyftlye that take paines." (p. 251)
338. "...then for euery feuer bee it neuer so hot,...so colde,... a remedy?" (p. 251)
339. "...that we are no sooner borne, but we...into the graue." (p. 252)

340. "By this thou shalt be able to instruct those that be weake, to confute those that bee obstinate,...by thy sure faith." (p. 252)
341. "...employ thy selfe to martial feats,...in y<sup>e</sup> laps of Ladyes." (p. 252)
342. "...to his owne shame which God hath giuen him for his owne preferment?" (p. 252)
343. "...and thus beginninge to delight to be a good husband, thou shalt begin to detest to be in loue...wyth loue." (p. 253)
344. "...yet goe, runne, flye,...whereby thou mayste tarry." (p. 253)
345. "...and reckon not with thy selfe how many myles thou hast gone, ...but how many thou hast to go, that proueth manlynesse." (p. 253)
346. "I must of force confes, that it is a corasiue to the stomacke of a louer, but a comforte to a godly lyuer,..." (p. 253)
347. "Sowre potions bring sounde health,...in working." (p. 253)
348. "...venture through fire and water,..." (p. 253)
349. "If he be cleanly, then terme they him proude,...a cowarde." (p. 254)
350. "But at the firste the Oxe weildeth not the yoke...ryght to reason." (p. 254)
351. "...be she neuer so comely call hir counterfaite,...it impudent, a harlotte," (p. 254)
352. "Searche euery vayne and sinew of their disposition, if she haue no sighte in deskante,...lyke a Pigge halfe rosted." (p. 254)
353. "...and more entised by their ornaments being artificiall, then their proportion beeing naturall." (p. 254)
354. "...thou wilt rather thinke the Serpents then Saynts,...enamoured." (p. 255)
355. "...rather Cardinals curtisans, then modest Matrones,...in conscience." (p. 255)
356. "...a fire diuided in twayne burneth slower, a fountayne...of the first." (p. 255)
357. "If thou be as hot as the mount Aetna, faine thy self as colde ...stealth slydeth away." (p. 255)
358. "If she breake promise with thee in the nighte,...hir honestie." (p. 255)
359. "Stand thou on thy pantuffles, and shee will vayne bonnet... and not to care." (pp. 255-6)
360. "But although I would haue thee vse companye for thy recreation,...thine olde trouble." (p. 256)
361. "Take cleere water for stronge wine,...of Philosophers." (p. 256)
362. "And seeing the cause that made in mee so colde a deuotion, shoulde make...in seeking a sore." (p. 257)
363. "And yet Philautus I woulde not that all women shoulde take



- pepper in the nose,...be guiltie." (p. 257)
364. "For although I waye nothing the ill will of light huswiues,  
...honest matrones." (p. 257)
365. "Gentlewomen bicause I would neither bee mistaken of purpose,  
...the cauils of the other." (p. 257)
366. "...although I haue ben bolde to inuay agayne many, yet am I  
not so brutish...demeanour of all." (p. 257)
367. "I know that as ther hath bene an vnchast Helen...faithful as  
Lucretia." (pp. 257-8)
368. "...I hope ther is none wil mislike it if she be honest, neither  
care I if any doe if shee be an harlot." (p. 258)
369. "The sowre Crab hath the shewe of an apple as well...as the honest  
Matrone." (p. 258)
370. "There is great difference betweene y<sup>e</sup> standing puddle, and the  
running streame,...yet both women." (p. 258)
371. "Seeing therefore one maye loue the cleere Conduit water, though  
he loath the muddie ditch, and...vnchast minions." (p. 258)
372. "Vlysses though he detested Calipso w<sup>t</sup> hir...to try their loue."  
(p. 258)
373. "...for although the falshood of Lucilla...yet the faith of some  
Ladye...olde disease." (p. 258)
374. "For as the fire stone in Liguria though it bee quenched...the  
Oyle of wisdom." (p. 258)
375. "...that some one Rose will be blasted in y<sup>e</sup> bud,...allured to  
vanitie." (p. 259)
376. "...then the mint Maister to see the coyner hanged,...theefe  
condemned." (p. 259)
377. "...howe soone the hot desire of Euphues was turned into a cold  
deuotion, not that fancie caused him to chaunge,...alter his  
minde." (p. 259)
378. "...to giue a Caueat to all parents, how they might bring...  
instructions." (p. 259)
379. "...although it bring lesse pleasure to your youthfull....  
Philosopher." (p. 259)

#### IV. Assonance

1. "...for an Atheyst, then for one of Athens, for Ouid then for  
Aristotle,..." (p. 185)
2. "...although my acquaintaunce...and my authoritie lesse to  
commaund you, yet my good will..." (p. 187)
3. "...is taught to come when hee is younge:..." (p. 187)
4. "...the more you seeke by arte to alter it, the more in...aug-  
ment it." (p. 191)

5. "...If Nature worke the effecte, what booteth any education?" (p. 192)
6. "...then is he impudent, if coldely an innocent..." (p. 195)
7. "...to haue made an Apologie, then anyway to tourne to Apos-tacie..." (p. 196)
8. "...obstinate in their owne opinions,..." (p. 196)
9. "Thou maist well perceiue that I did beleue thee,..." (p. 199)
10. "And I hope so to behaue my selfe as Euphues...Philautus per-swade himself..." (p. 207)
11. "...to mine arrow, y<sup>u</sup> shalt see me shoot so neere, y<sup>t</sup> thou wilt accōpt me for a cunning Archer." (p. 213)
12. "...rather bee earnestly entreated to repaire to his house, then euill entreated to leaue it." (p. 214)
13. "Neyther doth hee desire to bee trusted anyway,..." (p. 219)
14. "But yet I am not angry Euphues but in an agony,..." (p. 220)
15. "...such sweete meate,..." (p. 224)
16. "...many strokes ouerthrow the tallest Oke, a..." (p. 225)
17. "But as Ferardo went in poste, so hee retourned..." (p. 226)
18. "...I will hereafter frame my selfe to be coy, seeing I am claimed..." (p. 229)
19. "...that I knowe so noble a..." (p. 231)
20. "...neuer to seeke of some deceitfull shifter?" (p. 232)
21. "...thought he mee meete to..." (p. 232)
22. "I, but Euphues gaue the onset, I, but Lucilla gaue the occasion, ..." (p. 233)
23. "...so she may make it a mocke to forsake hir..." (p. 235)
24. "...their incontinencie, should flye y<sup>e</sup> like impudencie,..." (p. 240)
25. "...he be betraied with their inwarde trechery." (p. 241)
26. "...to increase thē, nor wit to keepe thē?" (p. 243)
27. "...sworne to the crewe, true to the crowne,..." (p. 247)
28. "...I gayne if I obtayne my purpose?" (p. 248)
29. "...not impietie infect the wisest wit,..." (p. 251)
30. "...in humaine affaires..." (p. 251)
31. "...is espyed, doe you not know the Nature...vpon extremities?" (p. 253)
32. "...so odious, so vgly, so..." (p. 255)
33. "...thee precise in keeping these precepts,..." (p. 256)
34. "...hastie in seeking a sore." (p. 257)
35. "...accordinge to the appointment..." (p. 259)

## V. Classical and Historical Allusions

1. "Venus had hir Mole in hir cheeke which made hir more amiable: Helen hir...Lycurgus his wenne...David holye..." (p. 184)
2. "...to bee the Tabernacle of Venus, then the Temple of Vesta." (p. 185)
3. "...for Ouid then for Aristotle...for Flora then for Diana." (p. 185)
4. "...as well Damocles to betray hym...from the flattery of Aristippus..." (p. 186)
5. "I can carous with Alexander...watch with Chrisippus,..." (p. 186)
6. "Hee that wyll carry a Bull wyth Milo, must vse..." (p. 187)
7. "The Troyans repented to late when their towne was spoiled:..." (p. 188)
8. "The Lacedemonians were wont...The Persians...Epicure..." (p. 188)
9. "The Parthians..." (p. 188)
10. "Let the Lacedemonian, the Persian, the Parthian, yea,..." (p. 189)
11. "Aristippus a Philosopher,...who so secure as the Epicures which wallowed in all kinde of licentiousnesse?" (p. 190)
12. "Doth not Cicero conclude and allowe, that...Doth not Aristotle...?" (p. 192)
13. "Which if I may obtain, assure your selfe y<sup>t</sup> Damon to his Pythias,...Scipio to his Laelius,..." (p. 198)
14. "...then a Stoicke in renouncing pleasure." (p. 201)
15. "...is not graunted to Iupiter. Who so is blinded with the caule of beautie,...not Giges cut Candaules...Paris...Menelaus..." (p. 210)
16. "Hadde Tarquinius vsed his loue with..., Lucretia woulde..." (p. 211)
17. "Penelope no lesse constaunt then she...if Vlysses hadde not..." (p. 211)
18. "...one dram of Ouids art, some of Tibullis drugs, one of Propertius pilles,..." (p. 213)
19. "...or the Unicorne his own vertue, were neuer to bee caught..." (p. 216)
20. "...though Polypus chaunge his hew, yet y<sup>e</sup> Salamander...though Proteus...yet Pygmalion retaineth...Aeneas...to Dido, yet Troylus...Craessida..." (p. 219)
21. "Moreover I haue not been vsed to the court of Cupide,..." (p. 221)
22. "Who more trayterous to Phyllis then Demophoon...to Dido then Aeneas...to Ariadne then Theseus...to Medea then Iason?" (p. 222)

23. "...had looked on Medusaes heade, and so had beem..." (p. 224)
24. "...among the Grecian Ladyes worse then a carryon, as Homere reporteth." (p. 230)
25. "Mirha was enamoured of hir naturall Father, Biblis of hir brother, Phaedra of hir..." (p. 231)
26. "...that Greece is neuer without some wily Ulysses, neuer void of some Synon..." (p. 232)
27. "I know that Menelaus for his tenne yeares warre...I wish thee rather Menelaus care..." (p. 234)
28. "...how valyauntly Aiax boasted in the feats of armes, yet Vlysses..." (p. 235)
29. "...I am in this poynt of Euripides his minde..." (p. 235)
30. "Did not Iupiter transforme himselfe into the shape of Amphitrio to imbrace Alamaena? Into the forme of a Swan to enioye Laeda? Into a Bull to beguyle Io? Into a showre of golde to winne Danae? Did not Neptune...not Apollo..." (p. 236)
31. "Venus was content to take the...Cornelia...Helen...Menelaus, then Theseus, and last of all Paris..." (p. 239)
32. "...But Venus played false..." (p. 240)
33. "Cornelia loued a Miller...Helen of Greece...Lais frequented them...?...Pasiphae loued one?...y<sup>t</sup> Mirha was so incensed?" (p. 240)
34. "The Axiomaes of Aristotle, the Maxims of Iustinian, the Aphorismes of Galen..." (p. 241)
35. "Danaus whome they reporte to bee the father of fiftie children, ..." (p. 243)
36. "...knight marshall to Cupid..." (p. 247)
37. "Achilles speare could..." (p. 247)
38. "If Phyllis were now to take counsayle,...Dido so fonde to dye for Aeneas, neyther Pasiphae...nor Phedra so..." (p. 248)
39. "...if one of the Uestall Virgins...of Venus..." (p. 248)
40. "...the sweete songs of Calipso, were...to entice Vlysses..." (p. 250)
41. "Follow Alexander...of Darius...Imitate Cyrus...of Panthea, and when Araspus..." (p. 250)
42. "Learne of Romulus...of Agesilaus...of Diogenes...that Cupide shooteth..." (p. 250)
43. "Is it not true which Seneca reporteth..." (p. 251)
44. "...the brandes of Cupide." (p. 251)
45. "That Galen gyueth goods, Iustinian honors." (p. 251)
46. "...to striue agaynst these Syrenes." (p. 255)
47. "...some Pilades to encourage Orestes, some Damon to release Pithias, some Scipio to recure Laelius. Phyllis in...Asiarchus...Biarus a Romaine,..." (p. 256)
48. "...as Aristippus to play with Lais, yet am I not so dogged as

Diogenes..." (p. 257)

49. "I know that as ther hath been an vnchast Helen,...Penelope, as...Pasiphae,...Theocrita,...as Iupiter loued Alemaena, yet...Phrigius embraced Pieria,...Isabel...Debora...as Lucretia." (pp. 257-8)
50. "Vlysses though he detested Calipso...imbraced Penelope with ..." (p. 258)

## VI. Consonance

1. "But Nature impatient of comparisons and as it were disdaining a companion, or copartner..." (p. 184)
2. "...seeing himself inferiour to none in pleasant conceipts, thought himself superior to al in honest conditions,..." (p. 184)
3. "Venus had hir Mole in hir cheek which...amiable;Helen hir scarre on hir chinne which Paris called Cos amoris,..." (p. 184)
4. "Tullie eloquent in his gloses, yet vayneglorious:..." (p. 184)
5. "Dauid holye but yet an homicide:..." (p. 184)
6. "...to obteyne some conquest, or by shame to abyde some conflict,..." (p. 185)
7. "...no companions whiche courted hym continuallye..." (p. 186)
8. "...beganne to bewayle hys nurture:..." (p. 186)
9. "...hauing therefore opportunitie to vtter my minde, I...to bee importunate wyth you..." (p. 187)
10. "...adloynd a woman so exquisite, that in some mennes...so excellent,..." (p. 188)
11. "...into thine owne conscience, and consider wyth..." (p. 189)
12. "...beseechinge thee to beginne to followe it." (p. 190)
13. "Infinite and innumerable were the..." (p. 191)
14. "...my resorte and company, and companions, which..." (p. 192)
15. "...distinction between the waxinge and the wayninge of the Moone?" (p. 192)
16. "...You carefull, we carelesse,..." (p. 193)
17. "...rather allow it in words thẽ follow it in workes,..." (p. 194)
18. "...not that my company stay my comming, I would..." (p. 194)
19. "...thou wilt curse thy hard penyworth, and banne thy hard hearte." (p. 195)
20. "...his owne witte before all mens wisedomes." (p. 195)
21. "...or for counsell to conclude peace." (p. 195)
22. "...to inueigh against wit, for then I wer witlesse, but

frankely...lyttle wit, I haue euer...of wit, that I...wisedome,  
and if Nature...any wit,..." (p. 196)

23. "...of all thy misfortune without mistrust of fleeting,..."  
(p. 197)
24. "...who will accompt thy bale his bane, thy mishap..." (p. 197)
25. "...thy mishap his misery,..." (p. 197)
26. "Not so common as commendable it is,..." (p. 197)
27. "I should cause you to cōvince me of those thinges,...condemned."  
(p. 198)
28. "...all things went in common betweene them, which all men  
accompted comendable." (p. 199)
29. "...for his owne continuance and the great countenaunce whiche  
..., crepte into..." (p. 199)
30. "...crepte into credite..." (p. 199)
31. "...to welcome straungers with strangnes, I must needes say  
the custome is strange..." (p. 200)
32. "...accompt it a delicate bayte with a deadly hooke,..."  
(p. 202)
33. "...as being in loue with theyr owne lookes, make such course  
accompt of theyr passionate louers:..." (p. 202)
34. "...& sownded the depth of their deceipt..." (p. 202)
35. "...or so currishe to their loyall louers...." (p. 203)
36. "...or I as able to ouercome, as Mistress Lucilla would...  
ouerthrown." (p. 204)
37. "...Such lewde disposition, to honest discretion:..." (p. 204)
38. "...witte hath bewitched me, whose rare..." (p. 205)
39. "...conscience and concupiscence?" (p. 205)
40. "...doth perhappes desyre my loue, but Philautus hath deserued  
it." (p. 205)
41. "...bene faythlesse to one, will neuer be faythfull to any."  
(p. 205)
42. "It is not my desire, but his desertes..." (p. 206)
43. "Philautus was corriuall with him, and cookemate with Lucilla."  
(p. 208)
44. "...wee want remedyes to recure our maladyes, but reason..."  
(p. 208)
45. "...without resistaunce, & is harboured there without repen-  
taunce?" (p. 209)
46. "...either remoue the cause or reueale it." (p. 211)
47. "...thou be enamoured of some lady thou shalt not be enchanted."  
(p. 212)
48. "...thy courtly grace w<sup>t</sup>out coynes,..." (p. 212)
49. "...thy curteous demeanour without curiosity,..." (p. 212)
50. "...thy chast looks yet louely,..." (p. 213)

51. "...vnder so delicate a hew lodged deceite,..." (p. 213)
52. "I am therefore enforced perforce to challenge..." (p. 213)
53. "...haue wee to reioyce in our choyce?" (p. 214)
54. "...vse a common remedie, but yet comfortable..." (p. 215)
55. "...renewe his talke or to recant his sayinges,..." (p. 216)
56. "Mistres Lucilla, to recant verities were heresie, and renewe ..." (p. 216)
57. "I feare mee men should..." (p. 217)
58. "...should neuer winne them to their wills,..." (p. 217)
59. "...thy custody wishing thee to vse thy accustomable courtesie." (p. 217)
60. "...in place conuenient without company, with a bolde courage and comely gesture,..." (p. 218)
61. "...are soonest beleueed, that are best beloued, and they liked best,..." (p. 218)
62. "...and sterue to winne your good wil,..." (p. 218)
63. "...in their woordes, it freeseth in their works..." (p. 218)
64. "For although the worme entereth almost into euery woode,..." (p. 219)
65. "...his desire shall be made manifest by hys desertes." (p. 219)
66. "...as I may receiue comforte, and you commendacion." (p. 219)
67. "...y<sup>e</sup> bounds of honour (I will not say of honestie)..." (p. 220)
68. "...to obtayne my loue, seeing yet...a good looke?" (p. 220)
69. "I did at the firste entraunce discerne thy loue but yet dissemble it." (p. 220)
70. "...thy scalding sighes, thy louing signes, caused me to blush..." (p. 221)
71. "...cruell and harde hearted if I should not loue thee:..." (p. 221)
72. "...neither let this comfort thee, that at his departure he deputed thee in..." (p. 221)
73. "...whose feete are euer fleeting..." (p. 222)
74. "...to swallow the bayte which will breede thy bane?" (p. 222)
75. "I feare me thou hast the stone Continens about thee, which is named of the contrarye,..." (p. 222)
76. "...neyther discretion to discerne their dubling..." (p. 223)
77. "...wee I say are soone enticed, beeing by nature simple, and easily entangled,..." (p. 223)
78. "...the Wolfe weareth a faire face..." (p. 223)
79. "...entangled with the melodie of mens speach,..." (p. 223)
80. "...fayre promises and solemne protestations." (p. 223)

81. "And seeing I cannot by reason restrayne your importunate...  
to refraine the..." (p. 223)
82. "...rather make them common then comely..." (p. 223)
83. "...it shold not receiue so simple a reward." (p. 224)
84. "...to heare this newe kinde of kindenesse, such..." (p. 224)
85. "...such faire wordes, such faint promises,..." (p. 224)
86. "...thou desirest and deseruest aboue all other:..." (p. 225)
87. "...haue small force...they good Fortune to vndermine them by  
pollycie." (p. 225)
88. "No no Euphues thou onely hast wonne me..." (p. 225)
89. "It is not his great manners, but thy good manners, that shall  
make my marriage." (p. 225)
90. "...I feare me though I be wel beloued, yet I shoulde hardlye  
bee beleueed." (p. 226)
91. "...hauing no opportunitie to conferre wyth...to continue with..."  
(p. 226)
92. "...to woorke his delight, hee coyned an excuse to hasten his  
departure,..." (p. 226)
93. "...he was almost in an extasie through the extremitie of hys  
passions:..." (p. 227)
94. "...to offer any greate portions for that thou knowest...my  
possessions." (p. 227)
95. "...to the ende the desire of either of you...to the delight  
of you both,..." (p. 227)
96. "...one in your consciencs, so the worlde may testifie the  
other by your conuersations,..." (p. 227)
97. "...being a maiden, maketh me to shun the cares..." (p. 228)
98. "...in myne owne countray, for that commonlye these thinges  
happen alwayes to the contrarie." (p. 228)
99. "Certes if when I looked merilye on Philautus...the waye of  
marriage,..." (p. 228)
100. "...be at mine owne brydeall and not gyuen in...the Bride-  
grome." (p. 228)
101. "...where the one will not consent, so can there be no contract  
where both be not content,..." (p. 229)
102. "...to company with, and bee a common wife to all those that  
haue commonly resorted hether." (p. 229)
103. "...thou shouldest leade a lyfe to thine owne lykeinge in earthe,  
...tomentes leade Apes in Hell." (p. 230)
104. "...partner of thy desire, whiche will be partaker of thy  
dysease,..." (p. 230)
105. "...you Father bee displeased in that Philautus is displaced."  
(p. 231)
106. "...yet wisdome wylleth mee to..." (p. 231)



107. "...happen to my remembraunce, and warneth thee...a sharpe repentaunce." (p. 231)
108. "...I take the lesse griefe in that I see hir so greedy after Euphues." (p. 231)
109. "...altogether to forgette hir, I meane also to forgiue hir,..." (p. 233)
110. "...to be reuenged, mine olde desire be renewed." (p. 233)
111. "...she will be faithfull to thee, which hath bene faithlesse to mee?" (p. 233)
112. "...he reduced (I cannot say reclaymed) but..." (p. 234)
113. "...beeing deluded by Lucilla maist rather know what it is to be deceiued,..." (p. 234)
114. "...hauing reade the contents was well content,..." (p. 235)
115. "...may deeme it no dishonestie to deceiue thee,..." (p. 235)
116. "...no scorne to become beastes, to obtayne their best beloued, ..." (p. 236)
117. "I am of this minde, that both might and..." (p. 236)
118. "...Lucilla of lyghtnesse, thy will hangs in the lyght..." (p. 236)
119. "...and my presence at this present...to your presence." (p. 237)
120. "Sir whether your deserts or my desire haue..." (p. 237)
121. "...that I conceiued of thy constancie,..." (p. 238)
122. "...will proue me a lyer, and thee a light huswife." (p. 238)
123. "...it is a great comfort to haue a companion." (p. 238)
124. "...to bee excused then accused." (p. 239)
125. "...of a beast to confirme your folly, you shewe therein your beastly disposition,...suche beastlinesse." (p. 240)
126. "The Phisition saythe it is daungerous to minister Phisicke..." (p. 241)
127. "...whosæ heart is congealed into harde yce,..." (p. 241)
128. "Philosophie, Phisicke, Diuinitie, shal..." (p. 241)
129. "...to desire them which did onely earst detest them." (p. 241)
130. "...a lyttle witte, which...an obstinate will,..." (p. 241)
131. "...Doth not diuinitie condemne if it be not faythfully construed?" (p. 242)
132. "Euen so the greatest wickednesse is drawne...wit, if it bee abused by will,..." (p. 242)
133. "...then to courte it in Italy, in the company of Ladyes." (p. 242)
134. "...well descend, but ascende it coulde neuer." (p. 243)
135. "...one that disobeyed him in a thinge most dishonest,..." (p. 243)

136. "...is mine, and the losse thine." (p. 244)
137. "...bye word of y<sup>e</sup> world." (p. 244)
138. "...of lesse honour of greater honestie?" (p. 244)
139. "...hasten my deathe, and encrease thine owne defame,..." (p. 244)
140. "...I am pleased, certes I deeme you...were deceased:..." (p. 245)
141. "...mine annoy your iowe,..." (p. 245)
142. "...regarde of hir owne honour nor his request,..." (p. 245)
143. "...to insert it, and so incredible that all women..." (p. 245)
144. "...both abandoning Lucilla as most abominable." (p. 245)
145. "...of place seuered, yet the coniunction...bee seperated,..." (p. 246)
146. "...forgot reason, both so mangled with repulse,..." (p. 246)
147. "...by deceite, and almost murthered by disdain,..." (p. 246)
148. "...might not dehort vs, yet the...should deterrevs,..." (p. 246)
149. "...hath bene deceiued by fancie,..." (p. 247)
150. "...younge men against fleetinge minions." (p. 247)
151. "...to obtaine his purpose, or so obstinate in his opinion..." (p. 247)
152. "...neyther Dido so fonde to dye for Aeneas,..." (p. 248)
153. "...fancie wyth desire, but to quench...disdayne." (p. 248)
154. "...the seconde perilous, the thirde pestilent." (p. 248)
155. "...what recompence shall I reape besides repentaunce? What other rewarde whall I haue then reproch?" (p. 248)
156. "...taunted and retaunted, with..." (p. 249)
157. "...check and checkmate,..." (p. 249)
158. "...flowted and reflowted..." (p. 249)
159. "...consume the body, yea and confound the soule." (p. 249)
160. "...is not willying will to morrow bee more wilful." (p. 249)
161. "...to morrow, when as their morrow doth...their sorrow." (p. 250)
162. "...their deceitfull promises, allure thee to delaies." (p. 250)
163. "...my lyght affection, neglect my serious affaires." (p. 250)
164. "...maketh all the sences senceless." (p. 250)
165. "...the onely nourse and nourisher of..." (p. 250)
166. "...howe forwarde to wickednesse, howe frowarde to wisedome,..." (p. 250)
167. "...I much vnlike these Abbaie lubbers in my lyfe (though farre vnlike..." (p. 250)

168. "...wit enclineth onely to wickednesse,..." (p. 251)
169. "Besides this immoderate sleep, immodest play,..." (p. 251)
170. "...to confute those that bee obstinate, to confounde,...to confirme the faythfull, to comfort..." (p. 251)
171. "...no wit springe in the will..." (p. 252)
172. "...wyll deeme my precepts hard, and esteeme..." (p. 253)
173. "...offer thy deuotyon to thine owne destruction,..." (p. 253)
174. "...confes, that it is a corasie to...but a comforte..." (p. 253)
175. "Sowre potions bringe sounde..." (p. 253)
176. "...in repeating their vices thou couldest be as eloquent, as in remembring..." (p. 254)
177. "...to the worste be she neuer so worthye." (p. 254)
178. "...hir grinning will shewe hir...hir whininge, lyke..." (p. 254)
179. "...to be enchanted then enamoured." (p. 255)
180. "...bewitched with their wiles that...will to eschue, nor wit ...so wicked y<sup>t</sup> thou wilt not,..." (p. 255)
181. "...seeme thou carelesse and then will she be carefull,..." (p. 255)
182. "...thou languish, then will she bee lauish..." (p. 255)
183. "...of hir honour, yea & of the...hir honestie." (p. 255)
184. "...deafe and not to heare, or desperate,..." (p. 256)
185. "...thee precise, in keeping these precepts,..." (p. 256)
186. "...companye for thy recreation, yet woulde...company of those y<sup>t</sup> accōpany thy Lady,..." (p. 256)
187. "...thy golde, nor precise in thy goinge,..." (p. 256)
188. "...such meates as shall prouoke thine...all such meanes,..." (p. 256)
189. "...to play with Lais,..." (p. 257)
190. "...a deuotion, shoulde make in thee also as frosen a desire,..." (p. 257)
191. "...the ill will of light..." (p. 257)
192. "...to play with Lais, yet am I...all Ladyes." (p. 257)
193. "...an vnchast Helen...a chast Penelope,..." (p. 257)
194. "...to be beloued as Iupiter loued Alcmaena,..." (p. 257)
195. "...abhorre y<sup>e</sup> beautie of Lucilla, yet wil he not absteine..." (p. 258)
196. "...wil honour those alwaies y<sup>t</sup> be honest,..." (p. 258)
197. "...& worship thē in my life whō I shall know to be worthy..." (p. 258)
198. "...hot desire of Euphues was turned...deuotion,..." (p. 259)

VII. Isocola

1. "...fine phrases, smoth quipping,..." (p. 184)
2. "...by wytte to obteyne some conquest, or by shame to abyde some conflicte,..." (p. 185)
3. "...eyther breede an intollerable trouble, or bringe an incomperable Treasure..." (p. 186)
4. "...or as cunninge Painters, as they were happie parentes,..." (p. 188)
5. "...they had set Hisoppe wyth Time, that is manners wyth witte, ..." (p. 188)
6. "...in euery chamber, yea, in euery channell,..." (p. 188)
7. "...Serue God, loue God, feare God,..." (p. 190)
8. "...so blesse thee as eyther hearte can wishe or thy friendes desire." (p. 190)
9. "But so many men so many mindes,..." (p. 190)
10. "...there is framed of the selfe same clay as well the tile to keepe out water as the pottle to contain lycour,..." (p. 190)
11. "...they breede more sorrowe and care, ...they bring more comfort and joy,..." (p. 192)
12. "...you testie without cause, wee hastie for no quarrell." (p. 193)
13. "You careful, we carelesse,..." (p. 193)
14. "Seeing therefore it is labour lost for mee to perswade you, and winde vaynely wasted for you to exhort me,..." (p. 194)
15. "...heere I found you, and heere I leaue you,..." (p. 194)
16. "Besides thys, a fine wytte, a sharpe sence,..." (p. 196)
17. "...that thincke to haue learning without labour, and treasure without trauayle,..." (p. 196)
18. "...that the finest edge is made with the blunt whetstone, and the fairest Iewell fashioned with the hard hammer." (p. 196)
19. "...this amitie grounded vpon a little affection, will soon... shall be dissolued vpon a light occasion..." (p. 197)
20. "...to be somewhat long, yet being somewhat straunge,..." (p. 198)
21. "...is my hand, my heart, my lands and my lyfe..." (p. 199)
22. "...it continued myraculous, if shaken off, ridiculous." (p. 199)
23. "...not onely one boord, but one bedde, one booke..." (p. 199)
24. "...who wanne hir by right of loue, and shoulde haue worne hir by right of lawe,..." (p. 199)
25. "the beautie whereof is parched with the Sommers blase & chipped with the winters blast,..." (p. 202)
26. "...theyr faces wrinckled, their fyngers crooked,..." (p. 203)

27. "...theyr letters, theyr labors, their loues, theyr lyues,..."  
(p. 204)
28. "I but Euphues hath greater perfection. I but Philautus hath deeper affection." (p. 205)
29. "That though the Spyder poyson the Flye, she cannot infect the Bee?" (p. 206)
30. "...& shew thy selfe, what loue can doe, what loue dares doe, what loue hath done." (p. 207)
31. "And can men by no hearb by no art, by no way procure..."  
(p. 208)
32. "...being so lewdly chayned at y<sup>e</sup> first, will be as lyghtly changed at the last,..." (p. 209)
33. "...and as they both come in a moment, so doe they both ende in a minute." (p. 209)
34. "Shall I not then hazarde my lyfe to obtaine my loue? and deceiue Philautus to receiue Lucilla?" (p. 209)
35. "...in loue a lyfe wythout hope, and a death without feare."  
(p. 211)
36. "Thou hast tried me, therefore trust mee,..." (p. 212)
37. "...thy woùd not so deep but I can search it, thy griefe not so great but I can ease it." (p. 212)
38. "yea, man the more wittie he is ye lesse happy he is." (p. 212)
39. "...thy chast looks yet louely, thy sharp taunts yet pleasant, ..."  
(p. 213)
40. "...talking wyth them, then tatling of them,..." (p. 214)
41. "...I am lyke to infect women with pride, whiche yet they haue not, and men with spyte whyche yet I woulde not." (p. 217)
42. "...yet my retourne I hope will bee so short, that my absence shall not breede thy sorrowe:..." (p. 217)
43. "...though Aeneas were to fickle to Dido, yet Troylus was to faithful to Croessida,..." (p. 219)
44. "When the Foxe preacheth the Geese perishe." (p. 220)
45. "...woulde soone weane mee from the teate of Vesta, to the toyes of Venus." (p. 221)
46. "...then Bees in Hybla, then stars in Heauen." (p. 221)
47. "...eyther therefore dissemble thy fancie, or desist from thy folly." (p. 221)
48. "To swill the drinke that will expire thy date? To desire the wight that will worke thy death?" (p. 222)
49. "...which haue neyther witte to decypher the wyles of men, nor wisdom to dissemble our affection,..." (p. 223)
50. "The Spider weaueth a fine webbe to hang the Fly, the Wolfe weareth a faire face to deuoure the Lambe,..." (p. 223)
51. "...the Bee that hath honny in hir mouth, hath a sting in hir tayle,..." (p. 224)

52. "...such certayne hope, such sodaine chaunge,..." (p. 224)
53. "The softe droppes of raine pearce the hard Marble, many strokes ouerthrow the tallest Oke,..." (p. 225)
54. "No no Euphues thou onely hast wonne me by loue, and shalt only weare me by law,..." (p. 225)
55. "I force not Philautus his fury, so I may haue Euphues his friendship..." (p. 225)
56. "Ferardo shall sooner disherite me of my patrimony, then dishonour me in breaking my promise." (p. 225)
57. "...mine vnworthinesse before thy Fathers wrath, my happinesse before thine owne misfortune,..." (p. 226)
58. "...either hee is slow in enquiring of your faultes, or you slack in aunswering of his questions,..." (p. 226)
59. "...as thou hast longe tyme lyued a mayden, so nowe thou must learne to bee a Mother,..." (p. 227)
60. "...of a noble progenie, of honest behauiour, of comely personage, ..." (p. 227)
61. "...thoughe the Iette gather vp the light strawe, yet can it not take vp the pure steele." (p. 228)
62. "...no marriage made where no match was ment:..." (p. 229)
63. "...I am neyther so vnnaturall to wreaste thee against...neyther so malytious to wedde thee to any,..." (p. 229)
64. "...what sleight pleasure to themselues, what greate griefe to their parentes..." (p. 230)
65. "...that the Cowe that gyues no mylke is brought to the slaughter, that the Drone that gathereth no honny is contemned..." (p. 230)
66. "...allowed of the Patriarches, hallowed of the olde Prophetes, ..." (p. 230)
67. "If hee bee base thy bloude wyll make hym noble, if beggerlye thy goodes shall make hym wealthy,..." (p. 230)
68. "...althoughe I see the bayte you laye to catche me, yet I am content to swallowe the hook,..." (p. 230)
69. "...me dull in perceiuing their falshood, they shall not finde me slacke in reuëging their folly." (p. 233)
70. "...I haue shrined thee in my heart for a trustie friende, I will shunne thee hereafter as a trothles foe,..." (p. 233)
71. "...that she will be faithfull to thee, which hath bene faithlesse to mee?" (p. 233)
72. "...bene any faithles to his friend, that hath not also bene fruitelesse to his God." (p. 233)
73. "...the entising lookes of a lewd wenche, then the entyre loue of a loyall friende?" (p. 234)
74. "If to bee true, why arte thou false?" (p. 234)
75. "...did delyght thee, why diddest thou breake them? if dislyke

- thee, why diddest thou prayse them?" (p. 234)
76. "...as thou hast reaped where an other hath sowed, so an other may thresh y<sup>t</sup> which thou hast reaped." (pp. 234-5)
77. "...ye Puttocke hath caught hir Chicken beginneth to cackle; and thou hauing lost thy louer beginnest to prattle." (p. 235)
78. "...as it is common so is it of course, betweene man & woman, as it is seldome so is it sincere,..." (p. 235)
79. "...of the similitude of manners, y<sup>e</sup> other of the sinceritie of the heart:..." (pp. 235-6)
80. "...lyue to see my woe, or to haue thy wil, and so farewell." (p. 236)
81. "...doe I craue amends, neyther feare reuenge,..." (pp. 236-7)
82. "...and whosoeuer iudgeth me light in forsaking of you, may thincke thee as lewde in louing of me,..." (p. 238)
83. "...and sithens I am an ensample to all women of lightnesse, I am lyke also to be a myrrour to them all of vnhappinesse,..." (pp. 238-9)
84. "...by so much the more I lament it, by howe much the lesse I looked for it." (p. 239)
85. "...seeinge your furye is so hotte, and my misfortune so greate, ..." (p. 239)
86. "...in a moment vnderued, vnlooked for, vnthought off,..." (p. 239)
87. "Ah Euphues into what a quandarie art thou brought? in what sodeine misfortune art thou wrapped?" (p. 240)
88. "I haue lost Philautus, I haue lost Lucilla,..." (pp. 240-1)
89. "...the Maxims of Iustinian, the Aphorismes of Galen,..." (p. 241)
90. "...that I seeme onely to desire them which did onely earst detest them." (p. 241)
91. "...enflame the lyuer, murther the droncken?" (p. 242)
92. "...or entangled with the world, or inueigled with women." (p. 242)
93. "...a farewell to Naples, a farewell to woemen,..." (p. 242)
94. "...more beautie then was conuenient for one that shoulde bee honeste, and more cockering then was meete for one that shoulde bee a matrone." (p. 243)
95. "...faithfull to Philautus, or neuer faithlesse to Euphues, ... fickle to Curio." (p. 243)
96. "As thy beautie hath made thee blaze of Italy, so will thy lyghtnes make thee the bye word of y<sup>e</sup> world." (p. 244)
97. "Nature will not permitte me to disherit my daughter, and yet it will suffer thee to dishonour thy father." (p. 244)
98. "I made thee a wanton and thou hast made mee a foole,..." (p. 244)
99. "...to shewe the duetie of a childe, so ought you to shewe

- the care of a parent,..." (p. 243)
100. "...the eye of the maister that fatteth the horse, and the loue of the woman, that maketh the man." (p. 245)
101. "...either more fitte to continue our friendshippe, or of greater force to dissolue our follye,..." (p. 246)
102. "...shut mee out for a Wrangler, or cast me off for a Wire-drawer:..." (p. 246)
103. "Though Curio bee as hotte as a toast, yet Euphues is as colde as a clock,..." (p. 247)
104. "...shrinke in the weeting, then wast in the wearing." (p. 247)
105. "...sworne to the crewe, true to the crowne,..." (p. 247)
106. "...to renounce his Ladye as most pernicious, or redeeme his lybertie as most pretious." (p. 247)
107. "...the Rose to distill as the Nettle to sting,..." (p. 247)
108. "...I haue infected some by example, yet I hope I shall comforte many by repentaunce." (p. 247)
109. "...I meane not to runne with the Hare and holde with the Hounde, ..." (p. 247)
110. "...neyther Dido so fonde to dye for Aeneas, neyther Pasiphae so monstrous to loue a Bull,..." (p. 248)
111. "...more their babble then thine owne blisse, more their frupes then thine own welfare?" (p. 249)
112. "...one a dastarde, if he be not desperate, a pinche penny, if he be not prodigall," (p. 249)
113. "...consume the body, yea and confound the soule." (p. 249)
114. "...from houre to day, from day to month, from month to yeare, and alwayes..." (p. 249)
115. "...neyther their painted protestacions, neyther their deceitfull promises,..." (p. 250)
116. "...howe wanton with too much cockeringe, howe waywarde in hearing correction?" (p. 250)
117. "Is not the standinge water sooner frozen then the running streame? Is not he that sitteth more subiect to sleepe then he that walketh?" (p. 251)
118. "Is it not true...as to much bendinge breaketh the bowe so to much remission spoyleth the minde?" (p. 251)
119. "...we feelee the motion of loue, wee are resolued into lust." (p. 251)
120. "...defende thy clientes, enriche thy cofers,..." (p. 251)
121. "...profite to thy purse, and pleasure to thy minde." (p. 251)
122. "...for euery feuer bee it neuer so hot, for euery palsey be it neuer so colde,..." (p. 251)
123. "...a shadowe, a warfare,....a vapor, a bubble,..." (p. 252)
124. "...that we are no sooner borne, but wee are subiecte to death,



- ..." (p. 252)
125. "...to comfort the desperate, to cutte off the presumptious,  
..." (p. 252)
126. "...looke to thy grounds, yoke thine Oxen, follow thy Plough,  
..." (p. 252)
127. "In Autumne pull thine apples, in Sommer ply thy haruest, in the  
Springe trimme thy gardens,..." (p. 253)
128. "...of thy former loue, and repent thee of thy foolishe lust."  
(p. 253)
129. "Neyther lette rayne nor thunder, neyther lyghtening nor tempest,  
..." (p. 253)
130. "...how many myles thou hast gone, that sheweth wearinesse, but  
how many thou hast to go, that proueth manlynnesse," (p. 253)
131. "Any to be zealous, excepte they bee gelous?" (p. 253)
132. "...a Surgions boxe of sundrye salues, a Pedlars packe of new  
fangles." (p. 255)
133. "...more stronger to striue agaynst these Syrenes, and more subtill  
to deceiue these tame Serpents,..." (p. 255)
134. "...a fire deuided in twayne burneth slower, a fountayne running  
into many riuers...lesse affected with desire, and lesse infected  
with despaire,..." (p. 255)
135. "Loue crepeth in by stealth, and by stealth slydeth away."  
(p. 255)
136. "Fly the places, the parlours, the portalles,..." (p. 256)
137. "...rather loose it, then go for it,..." (p. 256)
138. "Take cleere water for stronge wine, browne bread for fine  
manchet,..." (p. 256)
139. "...ready to prouide a salue as thou wast hastie in seeking a  
sore." (p. 257)
140. "...neither bee mistaken of purpose, neyther misconstrued of  
mallice,..." (p. 257)
141. "...as ther hath rained a wicked Isabel, so hath there ruled  
a deuoute Debora,..." (pp. 257-8)
142. "...he loath the muddie ditch, and weare the precious Diamonde,  
..." (p. 258)
143. "...he detested Calipso w<sup>t</sup> hir sugered voice, yet he imbraced  
Penelope with hir rude distaffe." (p. 258)
144. "Though ye teares of the Hart be salt, yet the tears of ye Bore  
be sweet,..." (p. 258)
145. "...the mint Maister to see the coyner hanged, or the true subiect  
the false traytour araigned,..." (p. 259)

VIII. Personification

1. "...But Nature impatient of comparisons, and as it were disdain-  
ing a companion,..." (p. 184)
2. "...that not onely shee proued Fortune counterfaite,..."  
(p. 184)
3. "As therefore the sweetest Rose hath his prickel, the finest  
veluet his brack, the fairest flowre his bran, so the sharpest  
witte hath his wanton will, and the holiest head his wicked  
waye." (p. 184)
4. "...the Sunne doth harden the durte & melt the waxe, fire  
maketh...perfumes doth refresh y<sup>e</sup> Doue...maners." (pp. 190-1)
5. "Though yron be made softe with fire it returneth to his  
hardnes,..." (p. 191)
6. "And can you bee...Nature hath nourished and...Nature?" (p. 191)
7. "That Nature will haue course after kinde? That euey thing  
will...to Nature?" (p. 191)
8. "But why go I about to prayse Nature,...and obey Nature,...that  
Nature...?" (p. 192)
9. "Nature was had in such...If Nature then haue largely and boun-  
tefully...If Nature beare no sway,...what helpeth Nature?"  
(p. 192)
10. "The Sun shineth...the Diamond lyeth...the Christall toucheth  
..." (p. 193)
11. "...or as the Elder tree thoughe hee bee fullest of pith..."  
(p. 194)
12. "...how lewdly wit standeth in his owne lyght, howe..." (p. 195)
13. "For as the finest Rubie stayneth the coulour...the Sunne  
dimmeth the Moone,..." (p. 199)
14. "Fayre Lady seing the shade doth often shilde your beautie  
from the parching Sunne,..." (p. 200)
15. "The foul Toade hathe a fayre stoane in his head, the..."  
(p. 202)
16. "...the beautie whereof is parched with the Sommers blase,..."  
(p. 202)
17. "...that the cloath which staineth with Mylke, will soon loose  
his coulour..." (p. 205)
18. "Is not the Dyamonde of more valewe then the Rubie, bicause  
he is of more vertue? Is not the Emeraulde preferred before  
the Saphyre for his wonderfull propertie?..." (p. 206)
19. "No, no, y<sup>e</sup> tree is knowne by his fruite, the golde by his  
touch, the..." (p. 207)
20. "And as the Bee is oftentimes hurte with hir owne honny, so is  
wit not...with his owne conceipte." (p. 208)
21. "The ratling thunderbolte hath but his clappe, the lyghte-

ninge but his flash,,," (p. 209)

22. "...it is long before salt come to his saltnesse, but beeing once seasoned, it neuer looseth his sauour." (p. 216)
23. "...for as the Sunne when he is at the highest..." (p. 217)
24. "When the Foxe preacheth the Geese perishe...lyeth a gallying minde." (p. 220)
25. "...that the Purple dye will neuer staine, that the pure Cyeuets will neuer loose his sauour,...with discourtesie:..." (p. 226)
26. "Doth not wine...murther the droncken?" (p. 242)
27. "...and witte although it hath bene eaten...of his owne conceite,..." (p. 242)
28. "Nature will not permitte me to disherit...thy father...to procure my death." (p. 244)
29. "When loue tickleth thee decline it...destruction." (p. 248)
30. "...that loue creepeth into the minde by priuie craft, and keepeth his holde by maine courage." (p. 251)

#### IX. Pleonasm

1. "...as it were disdaining a companion, or copartner..." (p. 184)
2. "There frequented to his lodging and mancion house..." (p. 186)
3. "...I an olde senior, thou a..." (p. 188)
4. "Infinite and innumerable were the examples I coulde alleadge and declare..." (p. 191)
5. "Can the Aethiope chaunge or alter his skinne?" (p. 191)
6. "Nature was had in such estimation and admiration..." (p. 192)
7. "...so wicked & barbarous, any Turke so vile and brutish, any beast so dull and sencelesse, that...dispraye or contemne?" (p. 192)
8. "...that Nature frameth or maketh nothing in any..." (p. 192)
9. "As touchinge my residence and abidinge heere in Naples,..." (p. 192)
10. "...the more it is trodden and pressed downe,...it is handled and touched,...it withereth and decayeth." (p. 196)
11. "...in a moment or a very little space..." (p. 196)
12. "...not as he was accustomed solitarily alone,..." (p. 200)
13. "Truely I were uery cruell and hard hearted..." (p. 221)
14. "...that is true, faithfull, zealous, constant,..." (p. 241)

15. "...of olde and auncient customes." (p. 251)
16. "...yet goe, runne, flye,..." (p. 253)
17. "...y<sup>e</sup> more better it is in working." (p. 253)
18. "...y<sup>e</sup> more stronger..." (p. 255)
19. "...othes & solemne protestations, their exorcismes & coniurations,..." (p. 256)

## X. Puns

1. "...y<sup>t</sup> the son...fathers will, become retchless by his owne will." (p. 185)
2. "...a court more meete for an Atheyst, then for one of Athens,..." (p. 185)
3. "...to bewayle hys nurture; and to muse at hys Nature,..." (p. 186)
4. "...as wise an husbandman, as hee...husbande, or thy Mother... huswyfe as shee was a happye wife,..." (p. 187)
5. "But things past, are past callinge agayne,..." (p. 188)
6. "Who so seure as the Stoyckes, which lyke stockes were..." (p. 190)
7. "...to loue my nature, & loath my nurture,..." (p. 191)
8. "And can you bee so vnnaturall, whome dame Nature hath nourished..." (p. 191)
9. "The similytude you rehearse of the waxe, argueth your waxinge and melting brayne..." (p. 191)
10. "...wee zealous in affection, you ielous in all your dooinges,..." (p. 193)
11. "They that vse to steale...the Bees from their hiues, and it may bee, that..." (p. 194)
12. "And verily I am bolde to presume vpon your curtesie, since you your self haue vsed so little curiositie,..." (p. 198)
13. "...if it be the guise of Italy to welcome straungers with strangnes, I must needes say the custome is strange..." (p. 200)
14. "...to vse such welcome, and the men past shame that will come." (p. 200)
15. "When the blacke crowes foote shall appeare in theyr eye, or the blacke Oxe treade on their foote,..." (p. 203)
16. "...these gentlewomen present haue lyttle cause to thanke you, if you cause me to comend..." (p. 204)
17. "...sodayne chaunge, that they all chaunged colour." (p. 205)

18. "...what soeuer print be in the seale, and...babe being sealed with his..." (p. 207)
19. "...whose fruite is sweete, whose roote is more bitter then the claw of a Bitter,..." (p. 208)
20. "Thoughte hee him a Stoycke that he would...or a stocke that he coulede not?" (p. 210)
21. "Or seeing mee...all other in beautie, did you deeme that I would exceed all others in beastlynesse?" (p. 220)
22. "Thy wanton glaunces, thy scalding sighes, thy louing signes, caused..." (p. 221)
23. "...neyther hast thou more arte to discouer thy meaninge, but more hearte to open thy minde:" (p. 221)
24. "...if in loue I cast beyonde the Moone, which bringeth vs women to endless moane..." (p. 222)
25. "...saying it would rather make them common then comely." (p. 223)
26. "...to proceed of a simple minde, it shold not receiue so simple a reward." (p. 224)
27. "...to heare this newe kinde of kindenesse, such..." (p. 224)
28. "No no Euphues thou onely hast wonne me by loue,..." (p. 225)
29. "It is not his great manners, but thy good manners, that shall..." (p. 225)
30. "...more bolde then welcome, although in deed...the better welcome in saying that hee would come." (p. 226)
31. "...at mine owne brydeall, and not gyuen in the Church, before I know the Bridegrome." (p. 228)
32. "...will not consent, so there can be no contract...content,..." (p. 229)
33. "...and bee a common wife to all those that haue commonly resorted..." (p. 229)
34. "Lucilla thy coulour sheweth thee to be in a greate choler,..." (p. 229)
35. "...allowed of the Patriarches, hallowed of the olde Prophetes, ..." (p. 230)
36. "Neyther doe I loue hym so meanely that I should be ashamed of his name, neyther is hys personage so meane that...hym shamefullye..." (p. 231)
37. "...to excuse any of them, seeing I haue iuste cause to accuse them both?" (p. 233)
38. "...that she will be faithfull to thee, which hath bene faithlesse to mee?" (p. 233)
39. "...let not my credulytie be an occasion heerafter for thee to practise the lyke crueltie." (p. 233)
40. "...no guyle to be guyltlesse,..." (p. 233)
41. "...did delyght thee, why diddest thou breake them? if dislyke

- ..." (p. 234)
42. "...I will pray that thou mayst be measured vnto with the lyke measure..." (p. 235)
43. "...thee as hopelesse, as my selfe is haplesse,..." (p. 235)
44. "...hauing reade the contents was well content,..." (p. 235)
45. "...Lucilla of lyghtnesse, thy will hangs in the lyghte of thy witte:..." (p. 236)
46. "...and my presence at this present the better...to your presence." (p. 237)
47. "...no wight worthy to embrace, yet seeinge...worth then any, ..." (p. 239)
48. "...rather to bee excused then accused." (p. 239)
49. "...of a beast to confirme your folly, you shewe therein your beastly disposition, which is readie to followe such beastlinesse." (p. 240)
50. "...their incontinencie,...thee of any inconstancie." (p. 240)
51. "...the nature of a child, neyther the nurture of a mayden,..." (p. 243)
52. "...lyke a cockney, and thou hast handled mee lyke a cocke-scombe..." (p. 244)
53. "...as a clock, though he be a Cocke of the game,..." (p. 247)
54. "...willying will to morrowe bee more wilfull." (p. 249)
55. "...maketh all the sences sencelesse." (p. 250)
56. "...how forwarde to wickednesse, howe frowarde to wisdom, ..." (p. 250)

## XI. Repetition

1. "As therefore the sweetest Rose...his wicked waye." (p. 184)
2. "Venus had hir Mole in hir cheeke which made hir more amiable: Helen hir scarre...the whetstone of loue. Aristippus his wart,...his wenne." (p. 184)
3. "Alexander valiaunt...wicked." (p. 184)
4. "The freshest colours...canuas:..." (pp. 184-5)
5. "When parents haue...by his owne will." (p. 185)
6. "...as well the Spider to...wiselye." (p. 186)
7. "...if I be in Crete, I can lye, if in Greece I can shift... I am not." (p. 186)
8. "I can carous with Alexander...watch with Chrisippus,..." (p. 186)

9. "...so that I am enforced to thincke that either thou...to  
bee ill employed." (p. 187)
10. "Dyd they not remember...in hys age." (p. 187)
11. "They might also haue taken example...more amiable." (p. 187)
12. "If therefore thy Father...wyth faire lookes." (pp. 187-8)
13. "But things past, are paste...was spoiled:..." (p. 188)
14. "Thou art heere in Naples...misfortune." (p. 188)
15. "Heere mayste thou see that which I sighe to see,...and wyth  
shame in their houses." (p. 188)
16. "...maiste thou see not the carued visarde of a lewde woman,  
...corses." (p. 189)
17. "One droppe of poyson infecteth...and lust." (p. 189)
18. "Bee merrye but wyth modestie, be sober but not to...venturous."  
(p. 189)
19. "Let thy attyre bee comely but not costly, thy dyet wholesome  
...in thine owne conceipte." (pp. 189-90)
20. "Serue God, loue God, feare God, and God wyll so blesse thee  
...desire." (p. 190)
21. "But so many men so many mindes,..." (p. 190)
22. "Aristippus a Philosopher,...kinde of licentiousnesse?" (p. 190)
23. "If Nature...? If she haue...? If Nature beare no sway...?  
If Nature...? What helpeth Nature?" (p. 192)
24. "...my youthly and lusty affections...my resort and company..."  
(p. 192)
25. "...they breede more sorrowe and care,...bicause of my youthfull  
gentlenes." (p. 192)
26. "Eyther you would haue all men olde as you are, or els you haue  
quite...& deuoute aboue measure." (p. 192)
27. "Put you no difference betweene the younge flourishinge...and  
ye in all points vnlike vnto vs." (pp. 192-3)
28. "Seeing therefore we bee repugnaunt eache to the other...one  
sauce for all meats?" (p. 193)
29. "Suppose that which I neuer will beleue, that Naples is...and  
the very nurse of all sin,..." (p. 193)
30. "...shall it therefore follow of necessitie that all...shall  
be entangled?" (p. 193)
31. "The Sun shineth vppon the dungehill,...neyther entised with  
lasciuiousnesse." (p. 193)
32. "Is it not common that the Holme tree springeth amidst...the  
hard blade?" (p. 193)
33. "...and knowing your selfe either too simple...or of no courage."  
(p. 193)

34. "Seeing therefore it is labour lost...I haue reaped lesse profit." (p. 194)
35. "But as y<sup>e</sup> Camelion thoughe hee haue most guttes, draweth least breath...then the full barrell." (p. 194)
36. "...how lewdly wit standeth in his owne lyght, howe he...before all mens wisdomes." (p. 195)
37. "Neyther is that geason, seeing for the most parte it is proper to all those...Sententias loquitur carnifex." (p. 195)
38. "...although yron the more it is vsed the brighter it is, yet siluer with much wearing...withereth and decayeth." (pp. 195-6)
39. "Besides thys, a fine wytte, a sharp sence, a quickie vnderstanding...then the knottie Boxe." (p. 196)
40. "...whether he were moued by the courtesie of a young gentleman...I know not for certeyntie:..." (p. 196)
41. "...as neyther time by peecemeale should empaire, neither...infringe." (p. 197)
42. "...that a friend is in prosperitie a pleasure, a solace in aduersitie,...owne person." (p. 197)
43. "Is ther any thing in the world to be reputed...like will to like?" (p. 197)
44. "Although there bee none so ignoraunt...soone colde." (p. 197)
45. "Which if I may obtein, assure your selfe y<sup>t</sup> Damon...will be to his Philautus." (p. 198)
46. "But] After many embracings...not one to many.)" (p. 199)
47. "For as the finest Rubie stayneth the coulour of the rest...eclipsed the beautie of them all, and chaunged their coulours." (p. 199)
48. "The foule Toade hathe a fayre stoane in his head, the...a sower poyson in a siluer pottle." (p. 202)
49. "When the blacke crowes foote shall appeare in theyr eye, or the...none in their youth?" (p. 203)
50. "If you will be cherished when you be olde, be curteous while you be young,...with the pleasant wyne." (p. 203)
51. "...it shall not be amisse to examine whether man or woman be sonest allured,...or the female." (p. 203)
52. "...in whose sex ther is neither force to withstand the assaults of loue, neither...to remaine faythfull." (p. 203)
53. "When they see the folly of men turne to fury,...faythlesse for resisting their fylthinesse." (p. 204)
54. "Ah wretched wench Lucilla how art thou perplexed?...I but Philautus hath deeper affection." (p. 205)
55. "Ah fonde wench, doste thou thincke Euphues will deeme thee...honestie in question?" (p. 205)
56. "But can Euphues conuince me of fleetinge, seeing...louely to Euphues?" (pp. 205-6)



57. "For as the Bee that gathereth Honny out of the weede,...Euphues is to be commended." (p. 206)
58. "Is not the Dyamonde of more valewe then...then thyne owne talke?" (p. 206)
59. "But suppose that Euphues loue thee, that Philautus leaue thee, ...y<sup>e</sup> minde is peerelesse?" (pp. 206-7)
60. "What is hee Euphues that knowing thy witte,...in his owne misfortune?" (p. 208)
61. "The filthy Sow when she is sicke,...and is healed." (p. 208)
62. "I but Euphues, hath shee not heard also...is harboured there without repentaunce?" (p. 209)
63. "If therefore the Gods haue endewed hir with as much...for louing so hastely." (p. 209)
64. "And canst thou wretch be false to him...els to loose?" (pp. 209-10)
65. "Who so is blinded with the caule of beautie,...a slippery prancke?" (p. 210)
66. "Is it not the praye that entiseth the theefe to ryfle?...that he could not?" (p. 210)
67. "Well, well, seeing the wound that bleedeth inwarde...to my secrete friende." (p. 210)
68. "In battayles there ought to be a doubtfull fight,...by trust, by tyme." (p. 211)
69. "If there be anything that either by my friends may be procured ...so perillous as procrastinati<sup>o</sup>." (p. 212)
70. "True it is Philautus that he which toucheth y<sup>e</sup> nettle tenderly, is...y<sup>e</sup> lesse happy he is." (p. 212)
71. "Ah Liuia, Liuia, thy courtly grace w<sup>t</sup>out coyne, ...to be accompted the lesse." (pp. 212-13)
72. "Doubtlesse if euer she hir self haue ben scorched with... into phrensie:..." (p. 213)
73. "Heere you may see gentlemen the falshood in felowship, the ...rude historie." (p. 215)
74. "For as they be harde to be wonne without tryall of greate faith,..." (p. 216)
75. "It is long before the colde water seeth, yet being once hot,..." (p. 216)
76. "What could Adam haue done in his Paradise before his fall... a woeman?" (p. 216)
77. "...yet after him hee created a woman, the expresse...wyse that they detest lust." (p. 217)
78. "For as the horse if he knew his owne strength...them from their minde." (p. 217)
79. "For as the Hoppe the poale beeing neuer so hye groweth to the ende, or as the drye...euerye sinewe." (p. 218)

80. "Yet will you cōmonly object this to such as serue you & sterue to winne...in their works:..." (p. 218)
81. "For although the worme entereth almost into euery...curraunt in his dealinges." (p. 219)
82. "But as the true golde is tryed by the touch, the pure...of his Lady:..." (p. 219)
83. "Neyther doth hee desire to bee trusted any way,...by hys desertes." (p. 219)
84. "And can you then so much transgresse y<sup>e</sup> bounds of honour...all other in beastlynnesse?" (p. 220)
85. "When the Foxe preacheth the Geese...lyeth a gallying minde." (p. 220)
86. "Thy wanton glances, thy scalding sighes, thy louing signes, ...These subtill shiftes, these paynted practises...Besides this thy comly grace, thy rare quallities, thy exquisite perfection,...to despise things that be amiable, to forgoe delightfull practises,..." (p. 221)
87. "Thou arte not the first that hath solicited this sute,...thy minde:..." (p. 221)
88. "...wherin ther be more slights then there be Hares...in Heauen." (p. 221)
89. "Although my face cause him to mistrust my loyaltie,...of my firme honestie." (pp. 221-2)
90. "But alas Euphues, what truth can there be found...they hoiste saile." (p. 222)
91. "Who more trayterous to Phillis then Demophoon?...both they vnfaythfull of promisses." (p. 222)
92. "...saying it was a deceitfull bayte with a deadly hooke, & a sweete...potte." (p. 222)
93. "Canst thou then be so vnwise to swallow the bayte which will breede thy bane? To swill...thy death?" (p. 222)
94. "But it may bee that with y<sup>e</sup> Scorpion...in all brauerie." (p. 222)
95. "...that thoughe thou pretende faithe in thy words,...art inflamed with lust." (p. 222)
96. "Although I my selfe were neuer burnt, whereby I should...to suspect one vppon probabilyties." (pp. 222-3)
97. "Alas we silly soules which haue neyther witte to decypher...and easily entangled,..." (p. 223)
98. "The Spider weaueth...snappeth at the Fly,..." (p. 223)
99. "I haue read y<sup>t</sup> the Bull being tyed to y<sup>e</sup> Figge tree...and solemne protestations." (p. 223)
100. "I meane so to mortifie my selfe...Dauids Psalmes." (p. 224)
101. "I, but in the coldest flinte there is...the stalke of Iuie." (p. 224)

102. "...kindenesse, such sweete meate, such...sodaine chaunge..." (p. 224)
103. "The softe droppes of raine pearce the hard marble,...without resistaunce." (p. 225)
104. "...neither will I prefer his possessions before...then of thy loue." (p. 225)
105. "Ah my Lucilla howe much am I bounde to thee,...can exceede in constancie?" (p. 226)
106. "...that the Purple dye will neuer staine, that the pure Cyeuet...with discourtesie:..." (p. 226)
107. "...to vndertake any exploite be it neuer so dangerous, to hazarde...desperate:..." (p. 226)
108. "...as thou hast longe tyme lyued a mayden,...to make thee a wyfe." (p. 227)
109. "...a gentleman of great reuenewes, of a noble progenie,...breede thy loathing." (p. 227)
110. "...betweene them, where the mindes be...bene settled." (p. 227)
111. "...the sweetnesse that I haue found in the vndefiled estate of virginite,...a mother,..." (p. 228)
112. "...neither am I so wedded to the worlde...owne countrey." (p. 228)
113. "...although the loadstone drawe yron, yet it cannot...the pure steele. Although Philautus...obtaine Lucilla." (p. 228)
114. "Therefore deere Father in mine opinion as there can bee no bargaine,...match was ment:..." (pp. 228-9)
115. "But I will here after frame my selfe to be coy,...bene merrie:" (p. 229)
116. "Lucilla thy coulour sheweth thee...but bee patient,..." (p. 229)
117. "...I am neyther so vnnatural all to wreaste...owne likinge:..." (p. 229)
118. "...what iarres, what ielousie, what striefe,...of any other." (p. 229)
119. "...waye wyth thy selfe what slender profite they bring...parentes..." (p. 230)
120. "Thou knowest that the tallest Ashe is cut down...as Homere reporteth." (p. 230)
121. "...whiche was sanctified in Paradise,...of all persons." (p. 230)
122. "If hee bee base thy bloude wyll make hym noble,...aged Father." (p. 230)
123. "Neyther doe I loue hym so meanely...loue hym shamefullye:..." (p. 231)
124. "What his wealth is I neither know it nor waye it, what his wit ...knowe it,...vnless hee issue of a high progenie." (p. 231)

125. "Mirha was enamoured of hir naturall...sonne in lawe:..."  
(p. 231)
126. "Ah most dissembling wretch Euphues, O counterfayte companion,  
...to be made his foole?" (p. 232)
127. "I see now that as the fish Scolopidus in the floud...last cast  
become most faythlesse." (p. 232)
128. "But why rather exclaime I not agaynst Lucilla,...friende?"  
(p. 232)
129. "Ah well I wotte that a newe broome sweepeth...serued so vn-  
kindely?" (p. 232)
130. "But vnlesse Euphues had inueigled thee thou...bewrayed hir  
meaning." (pp. 232-3)
131. "...that Muske although it be sweet in the smell,...of the  
hearte." (p. 233)
132. "Couldst thou Euphues for the loue of a...still then on the  
stalke?" (p. 234)
133. "But thou Euphues, dost rather resemble...hang the fairest fly."  
(p. 234)
134. "Dost thou thincke Euphues that thy crafte...hands of a Scholler?"  
(p. 234)
135. "I know that Menelaus for his tenne yeares warre...a straggeler:"  
(p. 234)
136. "Seeing therefore there can no greater reuenge...eyes of others."  
(pp. 234-5)
137. "But thou canst blame me no more of folly...the fresh Violette."  
(p. 236)
138. "Did not Iupiter transforme himselfe into...to gayne his  
Lady?" (p. 236)
139. "Dost thou not know that the weake stomacke...to be accepted?"  
(p. 236)
140. "...as for reuenge thou arte not so able to lende a blow...  
the quarrel." (p. 236)
141. "As Lucilla was caught by frawde so shall she...my courage,..."  
(p. 236)
142. "...as for feruent loue, you knowe...with reason,..." (p. 238)
143. "...whoseuer accompteth you a lyar for praising me,...deceiued  
of thy foe." (p. 238)
144. "Well Lucilla (aunswered Euphues) this case breedeth...I looked  
for it." (p. 239)
145. "...in a moment vnderued, vnlooked for, vnthoughte off,..."  
(p. 239)
146. "The Wolfe chooseth him for hir make,...excused then accused."  
(p. 239)
147. "...whose corrupt manners haue staynde thy...of so many a  
Gentleman." (p. 240)
148. "Cornelia loued a Miller, and thou a miser,...was so incensed?"  
(p. 240)

149. "Ah Euphues into what a quandarie art thou...art thou wrapped?"  
(p. 240)
150. "O the counterfaite loue of women. Oh inconstant sex." (p. 240)
151. "...as we men, that is true, faithfull, zealous, constant,..."  
(p. 241)
152. "The Phisition saythe it is daungerous to minister...their  
inwarde trechery." (p. 241)
153. "...the expresse image of morall vertures,...to heale all  
diseases,..." (p. 241)
154. "The Axiomaes of Aristotle, the Maxims...earst detest them."  
(p. 241)
155. "If witte be employed in the honest...pestilent then witte?"  
(p. 241)
156. "Doth not y<sup>e</sup> fire (an element so necessarie...tree by the  
Scorpion?" (p. 242)
157. "The Rose though a lyttle it be eaten...of all young nouises."  
(p. 242)
158. "As therefore I gaue a farewell to Lucilla, a farewell...to  
the worlde,..." (p. 242)
159. "I had thought...by thy rype yeares." (p. 243)
160. "But alas I see in thee neyther...of thine honestie." (p. 243)
161. "...more beautie then was conuenient...bee a Matrone."  
(p. 243)
162. "Woulde I had neuer lyued to bee so olde...thou neuer bredde."  
(p. 243)
163. "Is this the comfort that the parent reapeth...for filiall  
feare?" (p. 243)
164. "If Danaus seeing but one of his daughters...to keepe the?...  
in his countrey." (p. 243)
165. "Oh I would thou haddest eyther bene...to Curio." (pp. 243-4)
166. "...lesse fayre or more fortunate,...or soone buried." (p. 244)
167. "Shall thine olde father lyue to see thee...vnkinde hate?"  
(p. 244)
168. "Affection causeth me to wishe thy life, and shall...to see  
me perish." (p. 244)
169. "I made thee a wanton and thou hast...beseemed a childe."  
(p. 244)
170. "...and if thou haue any duetie of a childe,...of a reasonable  
creature,..." (p. 244)
171. "...as you woulde haue me to shewe the duetie...to enioye him."  
(pp. 244-5)
172. "If therefore my delight bee the cause of your death,...an  
vnfortunate childe." (p. 245)
173. "...and so incredible that all women would...in telling what

174. "...both so mangled with repulse inueigled...murthered by disdain,..." (p. 246)
175. "How wantonly, yea, and howe willingly...our God?" (p. 246)
176. "Ah my Philautus if the wasting of our...vs to wyt." (p. 246)
177. "...will either shut mee out for a Wrangler...fleetinge minions." (pp. 246-7)
178. "Though Curio bee as hotte as a toast,...in the wearing." (p. 247)
179. "I knowe Curio to be steele to the backe...his kingdome." (p. 247)
180. "But by that time that he hath eaten...an ell of moane." (p. 247)
181. "...as will eyther quenche his flames or asswage...as most pretious." (p. 247)
182. "...as well Endyue to delyght the people...as the Spider to yeeld poyson." (p. 247)
183. "If my lewde lyfe Gentlemen haue...to continencie." (p. 247)
184. "Achilles speare could as well heale as hurte,...by repen-taunce." (p. 247)
185. "...I meane not to runne with the Hare...a quarrell with the other,..." (pp. 247-8)
186. "If Phillis were now to take counsayle,...enamoured of hir sonne." (p. 248)
187. "...not to blow the coales of fancie wyth desire,...striue to excede." (p. 248)
188. "For as the first draught of wine doth comfort...the thirde pestilent." (p. 248)
189. "If thou perceiue thy selfe to be entised with...with their bra-uerie,..." (p. 248)
190. "What shall I gayne...my pleasure?" (p. 248)
191. "If she be chaste then is she coy,...be weary of hir lyfe." (p. 248)
192. "To what ende then shall I lyue in loue,...endles shame?" (pp. 248-9)
193. "...taunted and retaunted, with check and checkemate, flowted and reflowted with intollerable glee." (p. 249)
194. "Alas fonde foole arte thou...he be too venturous?" (p. 249)
195. "That they accompte one a dastarde,...a foole?" (p. 249)
196. "Seeing therefore the very blossome of loue...is past cure." (p. 249)
197. "What lesse then the grayne of Mustardseede,...with Flyes." (p. 249)
198. "Defer not from houre to day,...in misery." (p. 249)
199. "...who thinke by delayses to preuente daungers,...the eye sight." (pp. 249-50)

200. "...neyther their amyable countenances,...to delaies."  
(p. 250)
201. "...that the sweete songs of Calipso,...most trecherie."  
(p. 250)
202. "Follow Alexander which hearing the commendation...Imitate  
Cyrus, a king...Learne of Romulus...of Agesilaus...of Dio-  
genes..." (p. 250)
203. "...that idlenes is the onely nourse and nourisher...of a  
heedlesse loue." (p. 250)
204. "I woulde to God I were not able to finde...of mine owne  
folly." (p. 250)
205. "How dissolute haue I bene...in hearing correction?" (p. 250)
206. "Doth not the rust fret the hardest yron...spoyleth the minde?"  
(p. 251)
207. "Besides this immoderate sleepe,...the soule,..." (p. 251)
208. "Eschewe idlenesse my Philautus, so shalt...neuer loue."  
(p. 251)
209. "...whereby thou maist know the...to thy minde." (p. 251)
210. "...for euey feuer bee it neuer so hot...so straunge,..."  
(p. 251)
211. "...thou bridle thine incontinencie,...thy lust." (p. 252)
212. "...that all the glorie of man is as the grasse,...into the  
graue." (p. 252)
213. "Heere shalt thou finde ease...sweete sauour." (p. 252)
214. "By this thou shalt be able to instruct...by thy sound doc-  
trine." (p. 252)
215. "If this seeme to straight a dyet...in y<sup>e</sup> laps of Ladyes."  
(p. 252)
216. "what more monstrous can there be,...but neuer bringe foorth  
apple?" (p. 252)
217. "That Amomus, and Nardus will...will of women?" (p. 252)
218. "Goe into the countrey looke to...thy profite. In Autumne...  
wyth loue." (pp. 252-3)
219. "...vse hunting or haukeing, either...the Phesaunt,..." (p. 253)
220. "...yet goe, runne, flye, into the...thou mayste tarry."  
(p. 253)
221. "Neyther lette rayne nor thunder,...stay thy journey,..."  
(p. 253)
222. "I must of force confes, that it is a corasiue...is in working  
..." (p. 253)
223. "To heale the body we trye Phisicke, search cunnige,...so  
vnlawfull." (p. 253)
224. "Do they thinke any man to delyght...he be not furious?"  
(pp. 253-4)

225. "If he be cleanly, then terme they him proude,...a cowarde."  
(p. 254)
226. "But at the firste the Oxe weildeth not the yoke,...ryght to  
reason." (p. 254)
227. "Laye before thine eyes the slights and deceits of thy Lady  
...dissembled mischiefe." (p. 254)
228. "...be she neuer so comely call hir counterfaite,...if impu-  
dent, a harlotte." (p. 254)
229. "Searche euey vayne and sinew of their...lyke a Pigge halfe  
rosted." (p. 254)
230. "I loathe almoste to thincke on their oyntments,...to the minde."  
(p. 254)
231. "Take from them their periwiggs, their payntings,...enamoured."  
(pp. 254-5)
232. "Looke in their closets, and there shalt thou finde...in con-  
science." (p. 255)
233. "...a fire deuided in twayne burneth slower,...with despaire,  
..." (p. 255)
234. "Yet if thou bee so weake beeing bewitched...thy grieve:..."  
(p. 255)
235. "If thou be as hot as the mount Aetna, faine...leaden dagger:..."  
(p. 255)
236. "Stande thou on thy pantuffles, and shee...of thy sorrow."  
(pp. 255-6)
237. "...melancholy, melancholy, madnesse, madnesse mischiefe..."  
(p. 256)
238. "...some Pilades to encourage Orestes,...with a potsherd."  
(p. 256)
239. "Be not curious to curlle thy haire, nor carefull to be...  
for hir sake." (p. 256)
240. "Beleeue not their othes & solemne protestations...vnsauerie  
toyes." (p. 256)
241. "It is riches and ease that nourisheth affection,...minde to  
folly." (p. 256)
242. "Take cleere water for stronge wine,...of Philosophers."  
(p. 256)
243. "Beleeue me gentlewomen, although I haue ben bolde...so foolish."  
(p. 257)
244. "...as ther hath bene an vnchast Helen in Greece,...as Lucre-  
tia." (pp. 257-8)
245. "The sowre crab hath the shewe of an apple as...yet both wo-  
men." (p. 258)
246. "Seeing therefore one maye loue the cleere conduit water,...  
vnchast minions." (p. 258)
247. "Vlysses though he detested Calipso w<sup>t</sup> hir sugered...to try



their loue." (p. 258)

248. "...for although the falshood of Lucilla haue caused me to forsake...Oyle of wisdom." (p. 258)
249. "For this is my faith that some one Rose will...to vanitie." (p. 259)
250. "...then the mint Maister to see the coyner hanged...condemned." (p. 259)

## XII. Rhetorical Questions

1. "...what countryman am I not?" (p. 186)
2. "Dyd they not remember that whiche no man...to receiue any forme?" (p. 187)
3. "Is it not farre better to...follies? Is not hee...make moste warie?" (p. 189)
4. "Aristippus a Philosopher, yet who more courtely? Diogenes a Philosopher, yet who more carterly? Who more popular then Plato, retayning alwayes good company? Who more enuious then Tymon,...societie? Who so seuere as the Stoyckes,...melody? Who so secure as the Epicures...licentiousnesse?" (p. 190)
5. "And can you bee so vnnaturall, whome dame...agaynst Nature?" (p. 191)
6. "Doe you not knowe that which all men...no other colour? That the stone Abeston...made colde? That fire cannot be forced downward? That Nature will haue course after kinde? That euery thing...to Nature? Can the Aethiope...his skinne? or the Leopard his hewe? Is it possible to gather...of thistles? or to cause any thinge to striue a gainst nature?" (pp. 191-2)
7. "But why go I about to prayse Nature,...or contemne? Doth not Cicero conclude...neuer erre? Doth not Aristotle alleadge ...and vnperfect?" (p. 192)
8. "If Nature then haue largely and bountefully...and gracelesse? If she haue dealte hardely with me, why extoll...birth? If Nature beare...adulation? If Nature worke the effecte,...education? If Nature be of strength or force,...nurture? If of none, what helpeth Nature?" (p. 192)
9. "Put you no difference...Beeche? No kinde of distinction ...the Moone? And betweene the...the Sunne? Doe you measure ...skirmishes of age? whose yeares are..." (p. 192)
10. "Seeing therefore we bee repugnaunt...in qualyties? Woulde you haue one potion...colde Palseye? one playster...fresh wounde? one salue for all sores? one sauce for all meates?" (p. 193)

11. "shall it therfore follow of necessitie that all y<sup>t</sup> are woed of loue, should be wedded to lust, will you conclude as it were ex consequenti, that whosoever aryueth heere whall be enticed to follye, and beeinge enticed, of force shallbe entangled?" (p. 193)
12. "Is it not common that the Holme...Beach? That the Iuie ...stones? That the softe fetherbed...blade?" (p. 193)
13. "Is ther any thing...to friendship? Can any treasure in this...a friende? in whose bosome...But whether am I carried? Haue I not also learned that one...friend? that tryall maketh trust? that there is falshood in fellowship? and what then? Doth not the sympathy...of mindes? Is it not a...to like?" (p. 197)
14. "Contrarywise if we respect more the outward...we fall? into what blyndenesse are we ledde? Doe we not...poyson? that in the greenest...Serpent? in the cleerest water the vglyest Toade? Doth not experience...bones? That the Cypressse...no fruite? That the Estridge...rancke flesh? How franticke are...fine face? the beautie whereof is parched ..." (p. 202)
15. "When the blacke crowes foote shall...their youth?" (p. 203)
16. "Ah wretched wench Lucilla how art thou perplexed? what a doubtfull...fancie? hope & feare? conscience and concupiscence?" (p. 205)
17. "And canst thou Lucilla be so light of loue in forsaking ...to Euphues? canst thou...countryman? A starter before thy companion?" (p. 205)
18. "Ah fonde wench,...to his friende? Weenest thou...thy fycklenesse? Will he haue no...in question?" (p. 205)
19. "But can Euphues conuince me of fleetinge,...fidelitie? Can he condemne me...my dislyking? Maye he...good will? Doth not he remember...it was? That the greatest blotte...Pommice? That though the Spyder...the Bee? That although I haue ...to Euphues?" (pp. 205-6)
20. "Is not the Dyanonde of...more verture? Is not the Emeraulde ...propertie? Is not Euphues...more wittie? But fye Lucilla, ...owne follye? canst thou fayne Euphues...thy foe? Dydest not...of inconstancie? dydest not thou accompt them...wonne? dydest not thou condemne them of weakenesse? what sounder argument can...owne answer? what better prooffe,...speach? what greater tryall,...talke?" (p. 206)
21. "But suppose that Euphues loue thee,...lust? Will he esteeme ...thy person? Is it lyke that...a meane man? I but what knoweth...or no? can any one make doubte...condicions? Can his honoure be...greate? is he to be...is peerelesse?" (pp. 206-7)
22. "Lust Lucilla, what sayst thou?" (p. 207)
23. "What is hee Euphues that knowing thy witte,...heauinesse? Was there euer...allured? any euer so faithlesse...friend? euer any so foolish...misfortune?" (p. 208)
24. "O ye gods haue ye ordayned...remedillesse? Did ye deeme...misledde? haue ye dealte...reasonable creatures." (p. 208)

25. "And can men by no hearb,...disease of loue?" (p. 208)
26. "Wilt thou be so impudent Euphues, to accuse the gods of iniquitie?" (p. 208)
27. "But why goe I about...of law? hast thou not redde Eupheus, ...fairer? that hee that...higher? that he that casteth... flame fiercer?" (pp. 208-9)
28. "But how should she be perswaded of...my loue? will shee not...with hir vertue? That my fancie...is violent?" (p. 209)
29. "I but Euphues, hath shee not hearde...in one night? y<sup>t</sup> the fire...the flaxe? that loue...without repentaunce?" (p. 209)
30. "Shall I not then hazarde my...to receiue Lucilla?" (p. 209)
31. "And canst thou...to thee? Shall hys curtesie...thy crueltie? Wilt thou...of folly? Shal affectiō...loyaltie? Knowest thou not...els to loose?" (pp. 209-10)
32. "Did not Giges cut Candaules a...measure? Did not Paris... prancke? If Philautus...Is it not the praye...to ryfle? Is it not the pleasaunt bayte,...to bite? Is it not a bye word ...an ill man? Did Philautus...desire it? Did he deeme him ...discerning? Thoughte hee him a Stoycke...coulede not?" (p. 210)
33. "Fye fonde foole Euphues, why goest thou...to propose:..." (pp. 210-11)
34. "Howe much therefore haue wee to reioyce in our choice?" (p. 214)
35. "What coulede Adam haue done...without a woeman?" (p. 216)
36. "Are they not more gentle,...then men? Are not men so bewytched...detest lust." (p. 217)
37. "And can you then so much transgresse...then deathe? I haue ...of sensuall lybertie? What hope can you haue...a good looke? Doe you therefore thinke...late discourse? Or seeing mee... in beastlynnesse?" (p. 220)
38. "Knowest thou not Euphues that kinges haue long armes & rulers large reches?" (p. 221)
39. "But alas Euphues,...a trauayler? what stay in a stranger? whose words...Who more trayterous to Phillis then Demophoon? ...Who more periured to Dido then Aeneas?...Who more false to Ariadne then Theseus?...Who more fickle to Medea then Iason?..." (p. 222)
40. "Is it then lykely that Euphues...soiourner?...Canst thou then be so...thy bane? To swill the drinke...date? To desire... thy death?" (p. 222)
41. "And what for that?" (p. 222)
42. "Ah my Lucilla...owne lyfe? howe might I excell thee...in constancie?" (p. 226)
43. "Do wee not see the noble...the Portingale?" (p. 228)
44. "Ah most dissembling wretch...mortall foe? vnder the...of deceit? Is thy Liuia...my Sainct? Is this the curtesie...

of Grecians? Couldst thou not...deceitfull shifter? Is it not...in their cradell? Why then did...such credulytie? shall my good will...ill wil? bicause I was...his foole?" (p. 232)

45. "But why rather exclaime...fayth? Ah wretched wenche canst thou be so...winde? so vnconstant...olde friende?...and am I serued so vnkindely? shall the fruite...disdayne?" (p. 232)
46. "Tush why go I about to excuse any of them,...them both?" (p. 233)
47. "How canst...of hir lyghtnesse? Howe canst thou...to mee?" (p. 233)
48. "Couldst thou Euphues...faythfull friendeshippe? Diddest thou waye...loyall friende? If thou diddest determine...to bee true? If to bee...thou false? If thou wast mynded both...at the firste? If to loue me,...at the last? If the sacred...breake them? if dislyke thee,...prayse them? Dost thou not know that... the darke? or lyke the pure...the fire? or at the leaste not vnlyke...on the stalke?" (p. 234)
49. "Dost thou thinke Euphues...thy villany? or that a Gentleman of Naples...of a Scholler?" (p. 234)
50. "Dost thou thinke Euphues such a dastarde that...crafte." (p. 235)
51. "Did not Iupiter...Alcmaena? Into the forme of a Swan to enioye Laeda? Into a Bull to beguyle Io? Into a showre... Danae? Did not Neptune...lusted after? Did not Apollo conuerter...hys disease? If the Gods thoughte...his Lady?" (p. 236)
52. "Dost thou not know...dyet doth soone surfet? That the clownes ...pure Treacle? that farre fette...for Ladies? That Euphues being...to be accepted?" (p. 236)
53. "As for chaunging, did not Helen...of all Paris?" (p. 239)
54. "But Venus played false: and what for that?" (p. 240)
55. "Cornelia loued a Miller,...thy fault? Helen of Greece...Shall the lewdenesse of others...lightnesse? why then dost thou not haunt...them? why doest thou not loue a Bull...one? why art thou not enamoured of thy...incensed?" (p. 240)
56. "Ah Euphues into what...brought?...And why shouldest thou torment thy selfe for one...feruencie?" (p. 240)
57. "A foolishe Euphues, why diddest...of wantonnesse? Had it not bene better...of Italy?" (p. 241)
58. "If witte be employed in...as witte? if in the idle trade of loue...then witte?" (p. 241)
59. "Doth not y<sup>e</sup> fire...be abused? Doth not Treacle...time? Doth not wine...the droncken? Doth not Phisicke...tempred? Doth not law accuse...interpreted? Doth not diuinitie condemne... construed? Is not poyson taken out of...by the Scorpion?" (p. 242)
60. "Lucilla (daughter I am ashamed...thy minde?" (p. 243)

61. "Is this the comfort that...care? Is obstinacie payed for obedience,...for filiall feare?" (p. 243)
62. "If Danaus seeing but one of his daughters...iust cause? Shall Curio enioy...to keepe thē? wilt thou Lucilla bestow thy self ...in his countrey." (p. 243)
63. "O Lucilla, Lucilla, woulde thou...honestie? eyther better minded or soone buried. Shall thine olde father...a younge foole? shall my kinde hearte...vnkinde hate?" (p. 244)
64. "Affection causeth me to wishe...my death? It is mine onely comfort...in mine age?" (p. 244)
65. "But why cast I the effect...was the cause?...And shal my louing care be cause...crueltie?" (p. 244)
66. "How wantonly, yea, and...our gotten treasure? How curious were we...our Lord? How deuoute in seruing...our God?" (p. 246)
67. "And what then?" (p. 247)
68. "What shall I gayne...my purpose? nay rather what shall pleasure? If my Lady yeelde...lemman?" (p. 248)
69. "If she be chaste then is she coy,...woe hir? if a lewde minion,...wedde hir?" (p. 248)
70. "To what ende then shall...then death? for all my time wasted ...repentaunce? What other rewarde...reproch? What other solace then endles shame?" (pp. 248-9)
71. "Alas fonde foole...own welfare? Wilt thou resemble...away? Dost thou not knowe...venturous? That they accompte...a foole?" (p. 249)
72. "What lesse then the grayne...the stalke thereof?" (p. 249)
73. "Howe dissolute...owne conceite? howe forward...correction?" (p. 250)
74. "Doth not the rust...not vsed? Doth not the Moath...not worne? Doth not Mosse...not stirred? Doth not impietie...to idlenesse? Is not the standinge water...streame? Is not he that sitteth ...walketh? Doth not common experience...well tilled? That the sharpest wit...exercised? Is it not true...spoyleth the minde?" (p. 251)
75. "What can be more exquisite...a remedy?" (p. 251)
76. "what more monstrous...preferment? What greater infamy, ...course of nature? Is it not folly to shewe wit...thereoff? Doest thou not...in Pharo? That the Persian...foorth apple? (p. 252)
77. "That Amomus, and Nardus...will of women?" (p. 252)
78. "Howe much more...quiet of conscience? And certes...extremities?" (p. 253)
79. "Do they thinke any man...on them? Any to be zealous,...gelous? Any to be feruente...furious?" (pp. 253-4)

XIII. Rhyme (end and internal)

1. "...insomuch y<sup>t</sup> he deemed himselfe so apt to all things, that he gaue himselfe almost to nothing,..." (p. 184)
2. "...that witte is the better if it bee the dearer brought: as in the sequele of thys historie shall...manifestlye." (p. 185)
3. "...for a graceless louer then for a godly lyuer: more fitter for Paris then Hector, and meeter for Flora then Diana." (p. 185)
4. "...as well Damocles...game wiselye." (p. 186)
5. "...hee was mery but yet so wary,..." (p. 186)
6. "...beeinge incensed agaynste the one as moste pernicious, and enflamed wyth the other as moste precious:..." (p. 186)
7. "If therefore thy Father had been as wise an husbandman, as hee was a fortunate husbande, or...happye wyfe,..." (p. 187)
8. "...Yet the remembraunce of thy former follies...of conscience, and bee...concupiscence..." (p. 188)
9. "...besides whome was...so exquisite,...so excellent,...their thefte,...hys throate:..." (p. 188)
10. "But so many men...eye odious, which...may be gratious." (p. 190)
11. "...to loue my nature, & loath my nurture,..." (p. 191)
12. "...& as you haue ensamples to confirme your pretece, so I haue most euident & infallyble...purpose:..." (p. 191)
13. "It is naturall...to alter it, the more in the ende you shall augment it." (p. 191)
14. "...Impe so wicked & barbarous, any Turke so vile and brutish, any beast so dull and sencelesse,..." (p. 192)
15. "...we merry, you melancholy,...wee hastie for no quarrell." (p. 193)
16. "...a perfecte wit is...with leaudenesse, neyther entised with lasciuiousnesse." (p. 193)
17. "But as to the stomacke quatted with daynties, all delycates seeme quesie,...and hauinge taken a surfet of delyght, seeme now to sauor it with despight." (p. 194)
18. "Seeing therefore it is labour lost for mee to perswade you ...nor solde with you,..." (p. 194)
19. "...and it may bee, that to get some aduauntage of mee,..." (p. 194)
20. "I meane not to apply it,...you to looke it,..." (p. 194)
21. "I go not about (gentlemen) to inueigh against wit, for... to haue made an Apologie, then any way to tourne to Apostacie: ..." (p. 196)
22. "...yet whosoeuer shall see this amitie grounded vpon a little

- affection, will soone...light occasion..." (p. 197)
23. "Gentleman & friend,...of thy manners, cutteth...in the like matter." (p. 198)
24. "Which if I may obtain, assure your selfe y<sup>t</sup> Damon to his Pythias,...to his Philautus." (p. 198)
25. "And verily I am bolde to presume vpon your curtesie, since...few words did in me." (p. 198)
26. "And seeing we resemble (as you say) each other in qualities, it cannot be that the one should differ from y<sup>e</sup> other in curtesie,..." (p. 198)
27. "Thou maist well perceiue that I did beleue thee,...I did beleue thee." (p. 199)
28. "...if it continued myraculous, if shaken off, ridiculous." (p. 199)
29. "...whose modest bashfulnesse...for enuie,...at hir beautie." (p. 199)
30. "Faire Ladye, if it be the guise of Italy to welcome...that will come." (p. 200)
31. "...to lyke it, by how much the more you vse to lye in it." (p. 201)
32. "...to shead teares, & you gentlewomen to shut your modest eares." (p. 202)
33. "...eyther armed you to practise the like subteltie, or accused my self of periury." (p. 202)
34. "...if you would be embraced in the wayning of your brauery, be not squeymish in the waxing of your beautie,...so shall you be cherished for your curtesie,...for your honestie,...for your amitie,..." (p. 203)
35. "...or I as able to ouercome as Mistress Lucilla...to be ouer-thrown." (p. 204)
36. "...from such lewde disposition, to honest discretion: hereof...crueltie, bicause...ciuilitie,...wickednesse, faythlesse for resisting their fylthinesse." (p. 204)
37. "Whose witte hath bewitched me,...without curiositie,..." (p. 205)
38. "I but Euphues hath greater perfection. I but...affection." (p. 205)
39. "Weenest thou that he will haue no mistrust of thy faithfulnesse,...fycklenesse?" (p. 205)
40. "...and by so much the lesse I am to be condemned, by how much the more Euphues is to be commended." (p. 206)
41. "Is not the Emeraulde preferred before...propertie? Is not Euphues more...wittie? But fye Lucilla,...own follie?" (p. 206)
42. "...is he to be thought thriftelesse, who in all...is peere-lesse?" (p. 207)

43. "But were I once certaine of Euphues good will, I woulde not  
...ill will." (p. 207)
44. "Let my father vse what speaches he lyst, I...owne lust."  
(p. 207)
45. "Albeit I can no way quench the coales of desire with forget-  
fulnesse, yet will I rake them vp in the ashes of modestie,  
seeing I dare not discouer my loue for maidely shamefastnes,  
I will dissemble it til time I haue opportunitie." (p. 207)
46. "...but will rather...thy lewdenesse, then pittie thy heau-  
nesse?" (p. 208)
47. "The filthy Sow...recured:...is quickly reuiued:...is re-  
couered:..." (p. 208)
48. "...the Harte beeing pearced with the darte,..." (p. 208)
49. "...spreade fairer?...swell higher?...flame fiercer?" (p. 209)
50. "yes, yes, she must needs coniecture so, although it be  
nothing so, for by...on y<sup>e</sup> suddaine,...it certeyne." (p. 209)
51. "...in yeelding so lyghtly, neither...louing so hastely."  
(p. 209)
52. "The vine wattered with wine is soone withered,...is quickly  
blasted,...the lesse fertil she is:...he is." (p. 212)
53. "I haue felt such a furious battaile...body,...by pollicie,  
...captiuitie." (p. 212)
54. "And though they be cōmonly in a great choler that receiue the  
mate, yet would I willingly take euery minute x. mates, to  
enioy Liuia for my louing mate." (p. 213)
55. "Philautus thincking all to bee golde that glistered, and all  
to bee gospell that Euphues vttered, aunswered his forged  
gloase with this friendly cloase." (p. 214)
56. "...and seeing that wee had both rather be talking wyth them,  
then tatling of them, wee will immediatly goe to them."  
(p. 214)
57. "...in thy choice, so I hope...in thy chaunce." (p. 214)
58. "...honestye then honoure, and yet both of suche honoure,  
as in all...in birthe, to bee compared...of them both."  
(p. 214)
59. "As olde men are very suspitious...thinge, so are they verye  
credulous to beleue any thinge,..." (p. 214)
60. "The eye that blinded thee, shall make thee see, the...heale  
thee,..." (p. 215)
61. "Heere you may see gentlemen the falshood in fellowship, the  
fraud in friendship,..." (p. 215)
62. "...were heresie, and renewe the prayses of woemen flattery..."  
(p. 216)
63. "...men are lyker to meruaile at them, then to imitate them,  
and readier to laugh at...them." (p. 216)
64. "...perswaded that all the Diuelles in hell were woemen, I  
woulde neuer...heauen, or y<sup>t</sup> they...heauen..." (p. 216)



65. "...whiche yet they haue not, and men with spyte...not." (p. 217)
66. "...commonly are soonest beleued, that are best beloued, and they liked best, whome we haue knowne longest,..." (p. 218)
67. "Neyther doth hee desire to bee trusted any way, vntill he shall be tried euery way,..." (p. 219)
68. "...take holde of hir promise, neyther vnkindenesse of hir precisenesse..." (p. 219)
69. "...and so fayre promises of fidelytie, that were I not ouer charie of mine honestie,...chastitie." (p. 220)
70. "...harde hearted albeit I am not, but truely loue thee I cannot,..." (p. 221)
71. "Besides this, the common people heere in Naples are not onelye...or desist from thy folly." (p. 221)
72. "Although my face cause him to mistrust my loyaltie, yet my faith...of my firme honestie." (pp. 221-2)
73. "...in a trauayler? what stay in a stranger?..." (p. 222)
74. "...yet he a trauailer...and he a stranger...yet he a sayler... yet he a starter..." (p. 222)
75. "...about thee, which is named of the contrarye,..." (p. 222)
76. "...which breede incontinencie, yet haue...modestie." (p. 222)
77. "...neyther crafte to trayne in young louers, neither courage to withstande their encounters,..." (p. 223)
78. "But alas it is both...simplicitie intrapped by subtilytie,..." (p. 223)
79. "...winter, when one Wolfe eateth an other." (p. 223)
80. "...of thinking, but seeinge it...nothing." (p. 224)
81. "Tush Philautus was likd for fashion sake,...for fancie sake,..." (p. 225)
82. "It is not his great manners, but thy good manners, that..." (p. 225)
83. "howe might I excell thee in courtesie, whome no mortall creature can exceede in constancie?" (p. 226)
84. "...to conferre wyth his louer, had small lust...any longer..." (p. 226)
85. "...more bolde then welcome, although...hee would come." (p. 226)
86. "But as Ferardo went in poste, so hee retourned in haste,..." (p. 226)
87. "...cause thy liking, neyther...thy loathing." (p. 227)
88. "...of virginitie, causeth me to loath...matrimony,..." (p. 228)
89. "...of noble progenie, or...countrey,...the contrarie." (p. 228)
90. "...and giue my selfe to melancholy,...bene merrie..." (p. 229)

91. "...although he were thoroughly angry,...his fury,...hir fancie,..." (p. 229)
92. "...mayden, thou haddest...to bee a virginne:..." (p. 230)
93. "If thou lyke any, bee not ashamed to tell it mee,...exhorte thee, yea, and as much...thee,..." (p. 230)
94. "...of thy desire, whiche will be partaker of thy dysease,..." (p. 230)
95. "...neyther are you more...me nappinge, then I willinge...my meaninge." (pp. 230-1)
96. "What his wealth is, I neither know it nor waye it, what his wit is all Naples doth knowe it, and wonder at it,..." (p. 231)
97. "...broode of the Hobbie,...capacitie,...a high progenie." (p. 231)
98. "...bee displeased in that Philautus is displaced." (p. 231)
99. "...of affection,....stayed by wisdome?" (p. 231)
100. "...remembraunce, and warneth thee...a sharpe repentaunce." (p. 231)
101. "...curtesie bewitch thee with such credulytie? shall my good will bee the cause of his ill wil?" (p. 232)
102. "...as to chaunge with euery winde? so vnconstant...olde friende?" (p. 232)
103. "...thoughe it be fitter, and...be better,..." (p. 232)
104. "...three yeares faithfully, and am I serued so vnkindely?" (p. 232)
105. "As for Lucilla seeing...to forgette hir, I meane also to forgiue hir,...to be reuenged,...be renewed." (p. 233)
106. "...to thee, which hath bene faithlesse to mee? Ah Euphues, let not my credulytie be...lyke crueltie." (p. 233)
107. "...to vndermine thee,...to ouerthrow thee." (pp. 233-4)
108. "If thou diddest...to be false,...to bee true? If to be true, why arte thou false?" (p. 234)
109. "...did delyght thee, why...them? if dislyke thee,...prayse them?" (p. 234)
110. "...to betray me,...to deceiue thee,..." (p. 235)
111. "...thee as hopelesse, as my selfe is haplesse,..." (p. 235)
112. "...to cackle: and...beginnest to prattle." (p. 235)
113. "...honestie, and for the...bands of amitie." (p. 235)
114. "...to imbrace Alcmaena? Into the forme of...Laeda?" (p. 236)
115. "...breede your iust anger,...your choler..." (p. 237)
116. "...absence,...your presence,...to see you,...to abhorre you." (p. 237)
117. "...thy constancie,...thy loialtie,..." (p. 238)
118. "...praising me,...enamoured of me,..." (p. 238)

119. "...lightnesse,...of vnhappinesse,...more patiently,...it worthely." (p. 239)
120. "...lament it, by howe much the lesse I looked for it." (p. 239)
121. "...wyllinge to receiue it, nor you to bestowe it:..." (p. 239)
122. "...bene more tollerable, and your fleetinge more excusable, ..." (p. 239)
123. "The Wolfe chooseth him for hir make,...for hir sake." (p. 239)
124. "Therefore good Euphues bee as merrye as you may bee,... maye bee." (p. 239)
125. "these are set down that we...incontinencie, should...impudencie, not...of any inconstancie." (p. 240)
126. "...to tosse my bookes,...to lyue with faire lookes." (p. 241)
127. "...so pretious as witte?...pestilent then witte?" (p. 241)
128. "...to increase thē, nor wit to keepe thē?" (p. 243)
129. "...thou from pietie, as I from crueltie." (p. 244)
130. "Nature will not...daughter, and yet it will...thy father." (p. 244)
131. "...the gaine is mine, and the losse thine,..." (p. 244)
132. "...bicause I am pleased,...deceased:...and mine annoy your ioye,..." (p. 245)
133. "Ah my Philautus if the...dehort vs, yet the...deterre vs,..." (p. 246)
134. "...in the weeting, then wast in the wearing." (p. 247)
135. "...as most pernicious, or...most pretious." (p. 247)
136. "...enchautēd with their beautie or enamoured with their brauerie, ..." (p. 248)
137. "...vowed virginitie,...vowed dishonestie." (p. 248)
138. "...kindle gelousie,...into phrensie." (p. 248)
139. "...no courtiers, and all to be pinglers, that be not coursers." (p. 249)
140. "...vntill to morrow, when as their morrow doth alwayes encrease their sorrow." (p. 250)
141. "...of fancie,...hir beautie:...such continencie,..." (p. 250)
142. "...of diuinitie, by this...incontinencie,..." (pp. 251-2)
143. "Heere shalt thou beholde as it were in a glasse,...as the grasse,..." (p. 252)
144. "That Amomus, and Nardus...in India, Balsomum onely in Syria,..." (p. 252)
145. "...sheweth wearinesse,...manlynesse." (p. 253)
146. "...of a louer,...a godly lyuer,..." (p. 253)
147. "...to delyght in them, vnles he doate on them?" (p. 253)

148. "...being artificiall, then their proportion beeing naturall."
149. "...to moue thee,...mortefie thee." (p. 255)
150. "...be merrye, when thy heart is melancholy,..." (p. 255)
151. "...hir window, renew the summe of thy sorrow." (p. 256)
152. "...rather loose it, then go for it,...a trifle,...olde trouble." (p. 256)
153. "othes & solemne protestations,...coniurations,..." (p. 256)
154. "...a deuoute Debora,...as Lucretia." (pp. 257-8)
155. "...honest maydens, though he forswear the...minions." (p. 258)
156. "...to folly, some other neuer allured to vanitie." (p. 259)
157. "...the coyner hanged, or the...traytour araigned,..." (p. 259)

CHAPTER VI

A COMPLETE LISTING OF SELECTED GRAMMATICAL DEVICES IN  
METAMORPHOSES

A Complete Listing of Selected Grammatical Devices in  
Metamorphoses

I. Alliteration: Transverse

1. "...incipimus: lector intende; laetaberis..." (1.1.4.)
2. "...cor miseri contubernalis mei..." (1.13.24)
3. "...remoto grabatulo varicus super faciem meam residentes vesciam." (1.13.24)
4. "...cuncta collustrantur, et ego curiose sedulo arbitrabar iugulum comitis,..." (1.18.30)
5. "...insuper pisces inscendere ac pedibus..." (1.25.44)
6. "...cum somno concederes et in cubiculum te deduxit comiter..." (2.6.58)
7. "...mirabundus steti, steterunt et membra..." (2.7.60)
8. "...ego prius inde discessi, quam diligenter omnem eius explorasset..." (2.8.60)
9. "...et balteo suo cincta, cinnama fragrans et balsama vorans,..." (2.8.62)
10. "...Diem ceterum...cenae dedimus..." (2.11.64)
11. "...populi circulo consaepus coronae circum stantium..." (2.13.68)
12. "...destinasset ille, iam deposita..." (2.13.68)
13. "...utroque regimine amisso, aegre ad ulterioris..." (2.14.70)
14. "...concedam cubitus, et cum docto...et cubiculum meum contendo..." (2.15.72)
15. "...rosa serta et rosa soluta..." (2.16.72)
16. "...ac relictum pullulatim...minuens meque respiciens..." (2.17.72)
17. "...proelio,...officio indixeras, iam proximante vehementer intentus..." (2.16.74)
18. "...ne nervus rigoris nimietate rumpatur..." (2.16.74)
19. "...iuvenum pacem publicam infestat..." (2.18.76)
20. "...Nec tamen incomitatus ibo: nam..." (2.18.76)
21. "...ullis parcitur...passus ore undique..." (2.20.78)
22. "Sic ille...sed instantia..." (2.20.80)
23. "...conformat articulum duobusque infirmis conclusis digitis..." (2.21.80)
24. "...meae fomenta conquiro, conspicor medio foro..." (2.21.80)
25. "...sagae mulieres...magicae supplementa..." (2.21.82)
26. "...nec satis quisquam...quantas latebras nequissimae..."

(2.22.82)

27. "...et quod paere praeterieram, si qui non..." (2.22.82)
28. "...custos paratus, cedo praemium..." (2.23.82)
29. "Mihi narras et nugas meras." (2.23.84)
30. "...calida cum oenophoris...et calice cenarumque...ornatus..." (2.24.86)
31. "...Fatue, qui in domo funesta...in qua totiugis iam diebus ne fumus." (2.24.86)
32. "...ad cadaveris solacium perfrictis...ad vigiliis...permulcebam cantationibus..." (2.25.86)
33. "...mihique oppido formido cumulator quidem, cum repente introrepens mustela..." (2.25.86)
34. "...ut tantillula animalis...turbarit animum..." (2.25.86)
35. "...sic ad illam 'Quin abis' inquam..." (2.25.86)
36. "...cubiculo protinus...cum me somnus profundus..." (2.25.86)
37. "...requirit actorem: ei praecipit, bono custodi redderet sine mora praemium..." (2.26.88)
38. "...extremum facinus in nefarium scelestamque istam feminam severiter." (2.27.90)
39. "...ad criminis credulitatem impelli: conclamant ignem..." (2.27.90)
40. "...iniectum pedesque palmeis baxeis inductum..." (2.28.92)
41. "...'Dabo' inquit 'Dabo vobis intemeratae..." (2.30.94)
42. "...custos hic sagacissimus, exertam..., cantatrices anus exuviis..." (2.30.94)
43. "...industriam sedulam eius fallere nequivissent, ...iniecta somni nebula..." (2.30.94)
44. "...roseum quatiens lacertum...et me securae quieti revulsum..." (3.1.100)
45. "...primum angiportum insistimus...publicum...insequitur..." (3.2.101-2)
46. "...cum fide proferam: nam cum fere iam..." (3.3.104)
47. "...pedes ipsius spirantibus...sanguine palpitantes..." (3.3.104)
48. "...quidem conscientia tanti...permotus statim profugit... quandam praesideo tenebrarum...perpetem..." (3.3.104)
49. "...profatus...repressit, ...praeco...respondere..." (3.4.106)
50. "...cardinibus obtortis...claustrisque omnibus..." (3.5.106)
51. "Sic salvi recedemus, si salvum in domo neminem reliquerimus." (3.5.108)
52. "...porrigi flagitat...feliciter prosterno..." (3.6.108)
53. "...porrectisque in preces manibus, per publicam misericordiam, per pignorum caritatem maestus..." (3.7.110)

54. "...viduitati ac solitudini de vindicta solacium date..." (3.8.112)
55. "...miserorum pignorum meorum peremptorem..." (3.9.112)
56. "...Neque...prosapiae tuorum ignari sumus, Luci domine; nam et provinciam totam inclitae vestrae familiae..." (3.11.116)
57. "...paulisper hilaro vultu renidens, quantamque poteram laetio-  
tiorem me refingens..." (3.12.118)
58. "...nec ipse discedit nec me digredi patitur..." (3.12.118)
59. "...manu firmiter iniecta Milo iussis balnearibus assequi..." (3.12.118)
60. "...quod alterius...iussa sum, mala quadam mea...iniuriam." (3.13.120)
61. "...a me concisus atque laceratus...lacteamque contingat cutem." (3.14.120)
62. "...de te doctrinaque tua praesumo, qui praeter...dignitatem..." (3.15.122)
63. "...iam scies...statum, iam scies...secreta..." (3.15.122)
64. "...totasque artis manus, machinas omnes ardenter exercet..." (3.16.124)
65. "...suis comdatum, secreto colit..." (3.17.126)
66. "...alibi trucidatorum servatus cruor et extorta...trunca cal-  
varia." (3.17.126)
67. "...litat vario latice...nunc lacte vaccino..." (3.18.126)
68. "...in mutuos nexus...atque nodatos cum multis..." (3.18.126)
69. "...in insani modum Aiacis armatus, non ut...infestus tota  
laniavit armenta..." (3.18.126)
70. "...vel trigemino corpori Geryonis vel triplici formae Ger-  
beri..." (3.19.128)
71. "...quadam reclusa...de quis unius operculo remoto..." (3.21.130)
72. "...fluctuantibus promicant...et fortes pinnulae..." (3.21.130)
73. "...vigilans somniabar...vigilarem scire..." (3.22.132)
74. "...arepta manu Fotis et admota meis..." (3.22.132)
75. "...et pyxidem depromit arcula; quam ego amplexus ac deoscu-  
latus prius,..." (3.24.134)
76. "...nec ullae plumulae nec usquam pinnulae..." (3.24.134)
77. "...more nobis parasserm...moram talem patereris..." (3.25.136)
78. "...melior me sententia revocavit...morte multata Fotide salu-  
tares..." (3.26.138)
79. "...salutari praesidio, pronus spei..." (3.27.140)
80. "...prolixa nimumque...nisu pateram..." (3.27.140)
81. "...amplas praeteriremus,...prospexi satis amoenum..." (3.29.142)
82. "...remedio de iumentu quadripedis incurvo..., inspectante nullo,  
resurgerem." (4.1.144)



83. "...prospero eventu curso me concito proripio..." (4.2.146)
84. "...quas rubi felices...ripae flurialis..." (4.2.146)
85. "...faciem prolixae foliatae pariunt..." (4.2.146)
86. "...modum floris inodori porrectos...modice punicantes..." (4.2.146)
87. "...videbatur hortulanus...holera vastaveram..." (4.3.146)
88. "...eiulabili cum plangore ad eum statim prosilit..." (4.3.148)
89. "...desino ac me retrorsus...deverteramus recipio..." (4.3.148)
90. "...spatio defectus et sarcinae pondere depressus..." (4.4.148)
91. "...iuvenum commissa videbatur, sic infesti compellant..." (4.7.152)
92. "...largissimae vapore recreati calidaque perfusi et oleo peruncti...largiter..." (4.7.154)
93. "...iuvenes adveniunt alii, quos incuntanter adaeque..." (4.8.154)
94. "...incondite pulmentis acervatim, panibus aggeratim, poculis agminatim ingestis..." (4.8.154)
95. "...primarium studium, sedulo...popularium..." (4.9.156)
96. "...spontale parricidium suadens persuadere..." (4.11.160)
97. "...faucibus interstinguere eam debuisset,...forinsecus... dispergere." (4.12.160)
98. "...callido deceptus astu,...dicta sunt credens..." (4.12.162)
99. "...quae prius miserat quaeque postea missurus foret..." (4.12.162)
100. "...in prospectu alioquin altonitum praeceps..." (4.12.162)
101. "...plaga petiti, iamque Thebanis conatibus,...Plateas proximam conscendimus..." (4.13.162)
102. "...viribus immanis ursae comparabat numerum...venationibus captas..." (4.13.164)
103. "...studiosa tenuamus...siccandum tradimus..." (4.14.166)
104. "...nos interdum...saginantes, sic instanti...sacramentum..." (4.14.166)
105. "...flagrantia solis et itineris spatio fatigatam..." (4.17.168)
106. "...fortis et intrepidus, immani forma..." (4.18.172)
107. "...occurrit scaevus eventus...suspensus opperior..." (4.19.172)
108. "...vitae metas ultimas obiret,...virtutis oblitus..." (4.20.172)
109. "...quamvis publica...quaerere potuit..." (4.20.174)
110. "...infelicissimo profuerunt iuveneri,...procerus et validus incuntanter..." (4.21.174)
111. "...vigore tolerans gloriam sibi reservavit, vitam fato reddidit." (4.21.174)
112. "...nobis perivit sed a gloria non perivit." (4.21.176)

113. "...et diutina...eserim,...fauces diutina fame...exerceo." (4.22.176)
114. "...secura brevem patientiam nostro...sectam paupertatis necessitas..." (4.23.178)
115. "...saxeo carcere serviliter clausa..." (4.24.180)
116. "...nuptialibus pacto...,consensu parentum...nuncupatus..." (4.26.182)
117. "...consensu...nuncupatus, ad nuptias...cognatorum..." (4.26.182)
118. "...tota lauris obsita, taedis lucida constrepebat..." (4.26.182)
119. "...nec ullo...repugnante, ac ne tantillum quidem resistente,..." (4.26.182)
120. "...multi mortalium longis itineribus atque altissimis maris meatibus..." (4.29.186)
121. "...et in matutino progressu virginis victimis et epulis Veneris absentis nomen propitiatur..." (4.29.188)
122. "...immodica...incendit animos, et impatiens indignationis..." (4.29.188)
123. "...vindictam tuae parenti...et in pulchritudinem contumacem severiter vindica." (4.31.190)
124. "...mirantur quidem divinam speciem, sed ut simulacrum fabre politum mirantur omnes." (4.32.192)
125. "...Sic profata virgo...ingressuque iam valido pompae..." (4.35.196)
126. "...subeunt aureae columnae, parietes omnes argenteo caelamine conteguntur..." (5.1.200)
127. "...pretioso caesim deminuto in varia picturae genera discriminantur..." (5.1.200)
128. "...luctu atque maerore consenescebant,...illae maiores cuncta cognorant..." (5.4.204-5)
129. "...consilio suasa de forma mariti quaerat, neve...curiositate de tanto fortunarum..." (5.6.208)
130. "...ingerens verba mulcentia et iungens membra cohibentia..." (5.6.208)
131. "...Lugubres voces desinite, et diutinis lacrimis..." (5.7.210)
132. "...extorres et Lare et ipsa patria degamus longe parentum velut exulantes..." (5.9.212)
133. "...exigua nobis invita proiecerit, confestimque praesentia nostra..." (5.10.214)
134. "...et omnibus populis tam beatum eius differamus praeconium: nec sunt enim beati quorum divitias..." (5.10.214)
135. "...sed plane sobrios revisamus diuque...ad superbiam poenien-  
dam firmiores redeamus..." (5.10.214)
136. "...et sexus infestus et sanguis inimicus..." (5.12.218)
137. "...illum praecipiti cum velocitate, nec venti ferentis oppertae praesentiam..." (5.14.220)

138. "...vel ipsa mellita cuntus dulcedine mollita conquievit..."  
(5.15.222)
139. "...deo profecto denupsit et deum nobis praegnatione ista gerit..."  
(5.16.224)
140. "...immanem colubrum multinodis volumnibus serpentem, veneno  
noxio colla sanguinantem hiantemque..." (5.17.224)
141. "...cara salute sollicitis assentiri velis et declinata morte  
nobiscum secura periculi vivere, an saevissimae bestiae sepe-  
liri visceribus..." (5.18.226)
142. "...sulcatos intrahens gressus cubile solitum conscenderit  
iamque...implicitus altum soporem flare coeperit..." (5.20.228)
143. "...ipsum illum Cupidinem formosum deum formose cubantem..."  
(5.22.230)
144. "...et impos animi, marcido pallore defecta tremensque desedit  
in imos poplites..." (5.22.230)
145. "...prona in eum efflictim inhians, patulis ac petulantibus...  
ingestis..." (5.23.232)
146. "...dextero manibus ambabus arrepto, sublimis evectionis appen-  
dix miseranda..." (5.24.234)
147. "...cupidine infimo matrimonio addici iusserat, ipse potius  
amator advolavi..." (5.24.234)
148. "...visu poterat volatus mariti prospiciens..." (5.25.234)
149. "...raptum maritum proceritas spatii fecerat alienum, per  
proximi fluminis marginem..." (5.25.234)
150. "...quae mariti mentito...prius quam ingluvie voraci me misellam  
..." (5.26.238)
151. "...ipsum illum deae Veneris filium, ipsum inquam Cupidinem..."  
(5.26.238)
152. "...e re concinato mendacio fallens maritum, quasi de morte  
parentum aliud comperisset..." (5.27.238)
153. "...sive illa de Nympharum populo seu de Horarum numero..."  
(5.28.242)
154. "...immo dominae praecepta calcares, nec sordidis amoris inimi-  
cam meam cruciaris..." (5.29.242)
155. "...et ipsam matrem tuam, me inquam ipsam parricida..." (5.30.244)
156. "...isto meo pectori violentiam scilicet perpetratae venitis  
..." (5.31.246)
157. "Nec enim vos utique domus meae famosa fabula et non dicendi  
filii mei facta latuerunt..." (5.31.246)
158. "...tui lusus semper explorabis curiose, et in eo luxuriam  
culpabis et..." (5.31.246)
159. "...et amores revinces et tuas artes...reprehendes?" (5.31.246)
160. "...variis iactabatur discursibus,...vestigationibus inquieta  
animo,..." (6.1.250)
161. "...frumentarias in acervo et alias flexiles..." (6.1.250)

162. "...et operae messoriae mundus omnis..." (6.1.250)
163. "...sed cuncta passim iacentia et incuria confusa..." (6.1.250)
164. "...curiose dividit et discretim remota rite componit..."  
(6.1.250)
165. "...fanum sollerti fabrica structum..." (6.3.254)
166. "...Iam quae possunt alia meis...subsidia, cui nec dearum  
quidem quamquam volentium potuerunt prodesse suffragia?"  
(6.5.256)
167. "...Quorsum itaque tantis loqueis inclusa vestigium porrigam,  
quibusque tectis vel etiam...inevitabiles oculos effugiam?"  
(6.5.256)
168. "Si quis a fuga retrahere vel occultam demonstrare poterit  
fugitivam regis..." (6.8.260)
169. "Miseremini terrae omniparentis agiles alumnae, miseremini et  
Amoris uxori..." (6.10.264)
170. "Ruunt aliae superque aliae sepedum." (6.10.264)
171. "Dextra laevaue cautibus cavatis proserpunt et longa colla..."  
(6.14.272)
172. "...sese compellit manifeste comperit: quidni, quae...Manesque  
commeare cogeretur?" (6.17.272)
173. "...qui te rogabit decidentis sarcinae fusticulos aliquos  
porrigas ei; sed tu nulla voce deprompta tacita praeterito..."  
(6.18.274)
174. "Canis namque praegrandis, teriugo et satis amplo capite prae-  
ditus..." (6.19.276)
175. "...per silentium asinario debili et amnica stipe vectori data..."  
(6.20.276)
176. "...ac si qui coetu caelestium defuisset, in poenam decem milium  
nummum conventum..." (6.23.280)
177. "...puellaque statim distenta vinculis cenam, quam postuma  
diligentia..." (6.30.294)
178. "...infelix anicula, ferinis invadunt animis..." (6.30.294)
179. "...Quam meis tam...,quid aliud quam meum..." (6.32.296)
180. "...indignanti similis arbitrabar super investigatione facti..."  
(7.1.298)
181. "...ne mala conscientia tam scelesto crimini praesens viderer  
silentio consentire..." (7.3.302)
182. "...commilitonum potius insisteretur et tirocinio...cohortis  
facies integraretur..." (7.4.304)
183. "...cunctorum periculorum particeps et pro...pervigilem curam  
suscipiens..." (7.6.308)
184. "...et pro mariti...suscipiens, aerumnas assiduas ingenio mas-  
culo sustinebat..." (7.6.308)
185. "...mutuis de virginis fuga deque mea vectura..." (7.9.310)
186. "...utrique destinata...,et ubi locerum esset...deductusque..."

(7.9.312)

187. "...visa ea, ut erat vinculis..." (7.9.312)
188. "...desiderio simulato, lupanaris spurci sordidique subito delectari nomine;..." (7.10.314)
189. "...gregatim pecua comminantes: unde praelectum grandem..." (7.11.314)
190. "...parte ne praesenti negotio..." (7.13.318)
191. "...Sed quas ego condignas Fotidi...quae me formavit..." (7.14.320)
192. "...convocatis denique gravioribus amicis consilium datur..." (7.14.322)
193. "...equinos lasciviens discurrerem, daturus dominis equarum..." (7.14.322)
194. "...Iovis servato foedere rivalem summo furentes..." (7.16.324)
195. "...comminatus, remulsis auribus dentiumque candentium renu-  
datis asceis..." (7.16.324)
196. "...meis cruciatibus insatiabilis aliam mihi denuo pestem in-  
struxit..." (7.17.326)
197. "...coxaeque dexterarum semper...locum dissipato corio..." (7.17.326)
198. "...latus prae ponderans declinarat sarcina, cum deberet potius  
..." (7.17.326)
199. "...capistro suspendere, cauda sublevare..." (7.18.328)
200. "...ut incessu meo commotae incitataeque funestis aculeis  
infeste me convulnerarent." (7.18.328)
201. "...nimia eius insolentia expugnata patientia mea, calces in  
eum validas extuleram..." (7.19.328)
202. "...nec ullum pestis extremae suffugium nec salutis aliquod  
apparet solacium..." (7.19.328-30)
203. "...et pondere levatus et exitio liberatus evado..." (7.20.330)
204. "...Nam imaginem etiam savii mentiendo ore improbo compulsat  
ac morsicat..." (7.21.330)
205. "...animos pastorum in meam perniciem atrociter..." (7.22.332)
206. "...vero carnem omnem operariorum cenae reserva..." (7.22.332)
207. "...et repentina facie conterritus totum corporis pondus in  
postremos poplites recello..." (7.24.334)
208. "...protinus pernici fugae committo, perque prona..." (7.24.336)
209. "...immitto me campis subpatentibus, ex summo studio fugiens  
immanem..." (7.24.336)
210. "...quippe consuetus ex forma concidi fustibus..." (7.25.336)
211. "...meis casibus pervicax tam opportunum latibulum misera  
celeritate praeversa..." (7.25.336)
212. "...mei perditam sibi requirentes vacculam variasque regiones  
peragrans..." (7.25.336)

213. "...innocentiae perhibere posset; profecto vos huius iniuriae pigeret..." (7.25.338)
214. "...percussorem criminales, ad casas interim suas vinctum perducunt..." (7.26.338)
215. "...pessimo isto asino demetere: nec tibi ministerium deerit istorum..." (7.26.340)
216. "...Et nunc iste securus incumbens praesepio voracitati suae deservit et insatiabilem profundumque ventrem semper esitando distendit..." (7.27.340)
217. "...venit quidam iuvenis e proxima civitate, ut quidem mihi videbatur unus ex famulis Charites..." (8.1.344)
218. "...quod diu cogitarat accingitur, ac die, quo..." (8.2.346)
219. "...ad honorem splendidae prosapiae inter praecipuos hospites ..." (8.2.346)
220. "...prospectu vestigatorum obsaeptis capreis, canes venationis ..." (8.4.348)
221. "...sed aper immanis atque invisitatus..." (8.4.350)
222. "...pilis inhorrentibus corio squalidus, setis insurgentibus ..." (8.4.350)
223. "...quidem lugentium officia sollenter affinxit; sed solae lacrimae..." (8.6.352)
224. "...casum mariti quiritans: confluunt civium maestae..." (8.6.352)
225. "...in pectore immo vero penitus in medullis..." (8.7.356)
226. "...insumebat luctuoso desiderio, et imagines defuncti..." (8.7.356)
227. "...aures obseratas de nuptiis obtundens aderat..." (8.9.360)
228. "...meas percurrit, adhuc...in meo vivit pectore..." (8.9.360)
229. "...miserrimae feminae necessarium concesseris tempus, quoad residuis mensibus spatium reliquum compleatur..." (8.9.360)
230. "...quoad residuis mensibus spatium..., quae res cum meum pudorem..." (8.9.360)
231. "Promissioni fallaciosae mulieris...et prolixè consentit de furtivo concubitu..." (8.10.360)
232. "Quam probe veste contectus omnique comite viduatus prima vigilia..." (8.10.362)
233. "Vindicavi in mei mariti cruentum peremptorem, meorum nuptiarum praedonem..." (8.13.366)
234. "...super sese diligenter obseratis inedia statuit elidere sua sententia damnatum spiritum..." (8.14.368)
235. "...mutati dominii novitatem metuentes et infortunium domus herilis altius miserantes fugere..." (8.15.368)
236. "...quidem commendatione susceperat, quidquid in casula pretiosum conditumque servabat,..." (8.15.368)
237. "...Pegasus inclutum illum metu magis volaticum fuisse ac per

- hoc merito pinnatum." (8.16.370)
238. "...congestus cessavit imber et infestorum canum revocata con-  
quievit procella..." (8.18.374)
239. "...vulnerati reliquam viam capessimus, alius lapidis, alius  
morsus vulnera referentes..." (8.18.374)
240. "...refectur paululum conquiescere corpora que sua...recurare..."  
(8.18.374)
241. "...et lassum trahens vestigium, ubertim lacrimans per viam  
proximat,..." (8.19.376)
242. "...qui requisitum comitem tempestivae viae commonefactum  
reduceret..." (8.21.378)
243. "...commoratus refert sese buxanti pallore trepidus, mira que  
super conservo suo renuntiat..." (8.21.378)
244. "...super conservo suo renuntiat: conspicatum se quippe supinato  
illi..." (8.21.378)
245. "...tori sui contumeliam vindicasse contenta, iam contra sua  
saeviens viscero..." (8.22.380)
246. "...seque per altissimum puteum, appendicem parvulum..."  
(8.22.380)
247. "...firmiter alligavit arbori ficulneae..." (8.22.380)
248. "...ad mercatum producimur magna que voce praeconis..." (8.23.  
382)
249. "...cinaedum et senem cinaedum, calvum quidem sed cincinnis  
semicanis et pendulis capillatum..." (8.24.384)
250. "...canens adambulabat, domi vero promiscui operis partiarius  
agebat concubinus..." (8.26.388)
251. "...intus aedium audito ruditu meo, praedam absconditam lati-  
bulis aedium rati..." (8.29.394)
252. "...raptim transcursa proxima porticu, triclinio..." (9.1.400)
253. "...in quo dominus aedium sacrificales epulas cum sacerdotibus  
deae cenitabat..." (9.1.400)
254. "...proximum petisse stabulum atque ibi pleraque...pari saevitia  
..." (9.2.402)
255. "...nam Myrtilum mulionem et Hephaestionem cocum et Hypatarium  
cubicularium..." (9.2.402)
256. "...temptantes variis morsibus quemque lacerasse, certe vene-  
natis morsibus..." (9.2.402)
257. "...solitariae fortuna munus amplexus, super constratum lec-  
tum abiectus..." (9.2.402)
258. "...contra vero si visum contactumque laticis..." (9.3.404)
259. "...noster attentus ferias nobis fecerit..." (9.6.408)
260. "...et munificentia publica saginati vaticinationisque crebris  
mercedibus suffacinati purissimi..." (9.8.410)
261. "...eius involant avidis colloque constricto et sacrilegos im-  
purosque compellantes..." (9.9.414)



262. "...promerent potius aureum cantharum, promerent auctoramentum ..."  
(9.9.414)
263. "...pectora copulae sparteae tritura...costas perpetua..."  
(9.13.420)
264. "...prandio laxarentur iumenta cetera, longe tardius applicari praesepio iubebat..." (9.15.422)
265. "...adulterorum internuntia de die cotidie inseperabilis ad erat..." (9.15.424)
266. "...et oro, mater, ordine mihi singula retexe..." (9.17.426)
267. "...custodelam omnem permittit, carcerem et perpetua vincula ..."  
(9.17.426)
268. "...digito tenus eam contigisset, idque deierans etiam confir-  
mat..." (9.17.426)
269. "...lavacri progressu affixus...atque...prendens lacinias..."  
(9.17.426)
270. "...et tenet nummos aureos manus Myrmecis quae nec aereos norat ..."  
(9.19.430)
271. "...magis magisque suspectus dira comminatur Myrmeci supplicia ..."  
(9.20.430)
272. "...et cetera consequenter suspiciatus sagaciter, extemplo sumpta familiari constantia..." (9.21.432)
273. "...et ista vincula conteras et insuper carceris..." (9.21.434)
274. "...subitario ducta consilio, eundem illum subiectum contegit ..."  
(9.24.438)
275. "...illam perfidam, illam impudicam, denique universi sexus grande dedecus, quae suo...Larem mariti lupanari maculasset..."  
(9.26.440)
276. "...truculentiae sulphuris te letali fumo necabo, ac ne iuris quidem severitate lege..." (9.27.442)
277. "...ut sine ulla controversia vel...in uno conveniat lectulo."  
(9.27.442)
278. "...et insuper affatim plagis castigatum ferinsecus abicit; at ille adulterorum omnium fortissimus..." (9.28.444)
279. "...peractisque feralibus officiis frequenti prosequente..."  
(9.30.448)
280. "Ad hoc matutino lutum nimis frigidum gelusque praeacuta frusta nudis invadens..." (9.32.450)
281. "...una de cetero cohorte gallina per mediam cursitans aream clangore genuino,..." (9.33.452)
282. "...quid prius quidve posterius, quid magis quid minus..." (9.34.454)
283. "...et cuncta facile faciens in civitate..." (9.35.454)
284. "...auxilium lapide contorto tertii...lapis contra omnium..."  
(9.37.460)
285. "...prolapsum capite sanguinem detergens rursus deprecatur civilius..." (9.39.464)



286. "...via lapide correpto totam faciem manusque eius et latera converberat..." (9.40.464)
287. "...mūnire se potuit sed plane identidem..." (9.40.464)
288. "...ad deversorii nostri fores claraque voce denuntiant hospiti nostro..." (9.41.468)
289. "...confususque de impotentia deque inertia sua..." (9.41.466)
290. "...sublata cunctatione scrupulosius contemplant singula..." (9.42.468)
291. "...in publicum deducunt carcerem,...cavillari non desinunt." (9.42.470)
292. "...qui propter eximiam impotentiam pulcherrime vapularat, ab illo praesepio nullo equidem..." (10.1.472)
293. "...tute ipse es: isti enim tui oculi..." (10.3.476)
294. "...facinus protinus exhorruisset, non tamen...putavit exasperandum..." (10.4.478)
295. "...nec quicquam melius videtur quam vita miserum privare..." (10.4.480)
296. "...domum se recipiens, prandio iam capto sitiens repertum..." (10.5.480)
297. "...destinatum iuvēni mortem praevenisset puer; sed fratrem iuniorē fingebat ideo privigni..." (10.5.482)
298. "...denique miseratione tantaque indignatione curiam sed et plebem maerens inflammaverat..." (10.6.482)
299. "...et accusationis manifestis...meditatis ambagibus..." (10.6.482)
300. "Placuit salubre consilium...iussus praeco pronuntiat patres in curiam." (10.7.484)
301. "...patronis denuntiat praeco neque principia dicere..." (10.7.484)
302. "...se vocasset indignatus fastidio novercae iuvenis, quod ulciscens iniuriam filli eius mandaverit necem..." (10.7.486)
303. "Cum iam sententiae pares, cunctorum stilis ad unum sermonem congruentibus..." (10.8.486)
304. "...qui morbi inextricabilis veterno vehementer implicatus..." (10.9.488)
305. "Ingens exinde verberonem corripit trepidatio et in vicem humani coloris succedit pallor infernus..." (10.10.490)
306. "...et sine pretio suum fecerat, tribuni sui praecepto debitum sustinens..." (10.13.494)
307. "...in immensem damni procedentem...immanem discordiam." (10.14.498)
308. "...utrimque secus sermone prolato iacturae remedium quaeritur, ne silentio procedens,..." (10.14.498)
309. "...utrique nullam se prorsus fraudem, nullam denique surreptionem factitasse..." (10.15.498)

310. "...insolita namque tergoris vastitate commoti, faenum prorsus intactum cotidie remanere cernentes,..." (10.15.500)
311. "...exhibitas escas appetebam: nam et quid potissimum abhorreret asino excogitantes..." (10.16.500-2)
312. "...totius Achaeiae provinciae, ut eius prosapia atque..." (10.18.504)
313. "...partim maritimo itinere confecto Corinthum accessimus, magnae civium turbae confluebant..." (10.19.506)
314. "...quo didiceram reclinat facile, quippe...difficile facturus ..." (10.21.508)
315. "...Teneo meum palumbulum, meum passerem..." (10.22.510)
316. "...et saxeis dentibus deformi saviari..." (10.22.510)
317. "...absentiam mariti nata puella, insita matribus pietate praeventa..." (10.23.512)
318. "...ut desolatam vicinam...viduatam domus..." (10.23.514)
319. "...sibi quidem fidelem sed de ipsa fide pessime..." (10.24.514)
320. "...quodque frustra paelicatus indignatione bulliret, fratris-que nomen saepius iterantem..." (10.24.516)
321. "...pridem nomen uxoris cum fide perdiderat, medicum convenit quendam notae perfidiae..." (10.25.516)
322. "...confecto simulatur necessaria praecordiis leniendis bilique subtrahendae illa praenobilis potio..." (10.25.516)
323. "...eius protestata clamore et populi concitato..." (10.28.522)
324. "...odores promicarent rosae, quae me priori meo Lucio redderent ..." (10.29.524)
325. "...pompatico favore deducor ac dum...primitiae spectaculi dedicantur." (10.29.524)
326. "...nunc in orbem rotatum flexuosi, nunc in obliquam..." (10.29.526)
327. "...de manibus fabri fonte manante, fluviales..." (10.30.526)
328. "...qualis fuit Venus cum fuit virgo..." (10.31.528)
329. "...Ipse autem color deae diversus in speciem,...caelo demeat." (10.31.528)
330. "...formae praeclare congruebant, et velut...coruscis praelucebant." (10.32.530)
331. "...longe suavior Venus placide commoveri cunctantique lente vestigio et..." (10.32.532)
332. "...et nunc mite conniventibus, nunc acre comminantibus..." (10.32.532)
333. "...lectus Indica testudine pellucidus, pulmea congerie tumidus ..." (10.34.536)
334. "...praeter pudorem obeundi publice concubitus, praeter contagium

- ..." (10.34.536)
335. "...lateri meo laceraret mulierem..." (10.34.536)
336. "...verum inanima etiam divino eius..., ipsa etiam corpora..." (11.1.538)
337. "...specimen deae praesentis statui deprecari, confestimque discussa pigra quiete..." (11.1.538)
338. "...repertu laetata filiae, vetustae glandis ferino remoto pabulo..." (11.2.540)
339. "...generato amore sociasti et aeterna subole humano genere..." (11.2.540)
340. "...nunc albo candore lucida, nunc croceo flore lutea..." (11.3.542)
341. "Plane memineris et penita mente..." (11.6.548)
342. "...cum somno protinus absolutus pavore et...sudore nimio permixtus..." (11.7.550)
343. "...viri feminaeque omnis dignitatis et omnis aetatis linteae vestis..." (11.10.554)
344. "...et aureum vasculum in modum papillae rotundatum...auream vanum aureis congestam ramulis..." (11.10.556)
345. "...nunc atra nunc aurea facie sublimis,..." (11.11.556)
346. "...attollens canis cervices arduas Anubis..." (11.11.556)
347. "...novitate reverendam altioris utcumque...religionis argumentum..." (11.11.558)
348. "Et ecce praesentissimi numinis promissa nobis..." (11.12.558)
349. "...evidentem maximi numinis potentiam et consimilem nocturnis imaginibus magnificentiam..." (11.13.560)
350. "...et maximis actus procellis...et aram misericordiae tandem..." (11.15.562)
351. "...tutior sis atque munitior, da nomen sanctae huic militiae..." (11.15.564)
352. "...cuius non olim..., teque iam nunc obsequio..." (11.15.564)
353. "...litteras voti intextas progerebat: eae litterae votum instaurabant..." (11.16.566)
354. "...insigni carchesio conspicua, et puppis intorta chenisco..." (11.16.566)
355. "...quique divinas effigies progerebant, et qui venerandis penetralibus pridem..." (11.17.566)
356. "...intra consaeptum templi Larem temporarium mihi constituo..." (11.19.570)
357. "...velis candentibus reductis in diversum, deae venerabilem conspectum,..." (11.20.572)
358. "...et per dispositas aras circumiens sacerdo, rem divinam procurans supplicamentis..." (11.20.572)
359. "...summisque precibus primum sacerdotum..." (11.21.572)

360. "...parentes immaturis liberorum desideriis modificari, meam differens instantiam,..." (11.21.574)
361. "...eiusdem providentia deligi, sumptus etiam...praecepto destinari..." (11.21.574)
362. "...evidentique magni numinis dignatione iamdudum felici ministerium nuncupatum destinatumque..." (11.21.574)
363. "...sed noctis obscurae non obscuris..." (11.22.576)
364. "...rituque sollemni apertionis celebrato ministerium ac matutino peracto sacrificio..." (11.22.576)
365. "...adyti profert quosdam libros litteris ignorabilibus prae-notatos..." (11.22.578)
366. "...ergo quod solum potest sine piaculo ad..." (11.23.580)
367. "...nullo vinculo prohibeor, quippe...videre praesentes plurimi..." (11.24.580)
368. "...diebus inexplicabili voluptate...perfruebar, irremunerabili quippe beneficio pigneratus." (11.24.582)
369. "...et depulsis vitae procellis salutarem porrigas dexteram..." (11.25.582)
370. "...paucisque post diebus, deae potentis instinctu,..." (11.26.584)
371. "...Romam versus projectionem dirigo; tutusque prosperitate ventorum..." (11.26.584)
372. "...cotidie supplicare summo numini reginae Isidis, quae de templi situ sumpto nomine..." (11.26.586)
373. "...et viriculas patrimonii peregrinationis attriverant impensae, et erogationes urbicae pristinis illis provincialibus antistabant..." (11.28.588)
374. "...insuper etiam deraso capite, principalis dei nocturnis orgiis illustratus." (11.28.590)
375. "...in supinam procrastinationem reieto negotio, statim sacerdoti meo relatis..." (11.30.592)
376. "...Denique post dies admodum pauculos deus..." (11.30.594)
377. "...et maiorum summus, et summorum maximus..." (11.30.594)

## II. Annomination

NOTE: Often, more than one example of annomination occurs within a line of text. The number placed in parentheses after the example indicates the exact number of examples used within that space.

1. "...vel cuncta vel certe..." (1.2.4-5)

2. "...quae vel auditu nova vel visu rudia vel certe supra captum cogitationis ardua videantur..." (1.4.6.) (2)
3. "...passim per ora populi sermo iactetur quae palam gesta sunt." (1.5.8.)
4. "...sedebat scissili palliastro semiamictus, paene..., ad mi-seram maciem..." (1.6.10) (2)
5. "...decreto dati..." (1.6.10)
6. "...diuturno deformata, diffletis..." (1.6.10)
7. "...novarum nuptiarum gaudiis a suis sibi..." (1.6.10) (2)
8. "...punicantem prae pudore...pube." (1.6.10)
9. "...cetera corporis..." (1.6.10)
10. "Fruatur diutius trophaeo Fortuna quod fixit ipsa." (1.6.10)
11. "...ducens, dextra..." (1.7.12)
12. "...voluptatem veneriam..." (1.8.14)
13. "...Lari et liberis..." (1.8.14)
14. "...siparium scaenicum complicato et cedo verbis communibus." (1.8.14) (2)
15. "...plurium perpetravit..." (1.8.15)
16. "...ronchis raucus..." (1.9.16)
17. "...praegnationis obsaepo utero et repigrato tetu perpetua praegnatione..." (1.9.16)
18. "...misella illa velut elephantum..." (1.10.18)
19. "...clausa ad centesimum lapidem in aliam civitatem..." (1.10.18)
20. "...ante portam proieta domo discessit." (1.10.18) (2)
21. "Mira nec minus saeva, mi Socrates, memoras." (1.11.20)
22. "...levata lassitudine noctis antelucio aufugiamus...longi-ssime." (1.11.20)
23. "...sopitus stertebat..." (1.11.20)
24. "...primum prae..." (1.11.20)
25. "...discerpimus vel membris eius destinatis virilia desecamus?" (1.13.22)
26. "...victimae religione, immissa dextera per vulnus illud ad viscera..." (1.13.24)
27. "...cardines ad foramina...ad claustra pessuli recurrunt." (1.14.24)
28. "...postes ad repagula, ad claustra pessuli..." (1.14.24)
29. "...certe destinatae iam cruci candidatus..." (1.14.24)
30. "...videbor verisimilia dicere proferens vera?" (1.14.24)
31. "...saltem suppetiatum, si resistera..." (1.14.24)
32. "...visum est anteluculo furtim evadere et viam licet trepido vestigo..." (1.14.26)

33. "Sumo sarcinulam meam, subdita, clavi pessulos..." (1.15.26)
34. "...conscius scilicet, mori cupis, nos cucurbitae caput..." (1.15.26)
35. "...ignoras inepte, nudum nec a decem plaestritis despo- ari posse?" (1.15.26) (2)
- 36. "...memini me terra dehiscente ima Tartara inque his canem Cerberum prorsus esurientem mei prospexisse." (1.15.26)
- 37. "...deductu...discluderet...dirumpitur...devolvor..." (1.17.28)
- 38. "...et causas coeplit huius odoris comiter inquirere." (1.17.30)
- 39. "...sumo sarcinulam et pretio...stabulario..." (1.17.30)
- 40. "...credam cruore..." (1.18.30)
- 41. "...et genua quatuor et gradu..." (1.18.32)
- 42. "...dolui...deficior...desidero..." (1.18.32)
- 43. "...pane propere ei porrigo et iuxta platanum..." (1.18.32)
- 44. "...deorsum demeare..." (1.19.32)
- 45. "Nam et crebritas ipsa commeantium metum mihi cumulabat..." (1.19.32) (2)
- 46. "...placidae paludis..." (1.19.32)
- 47. "...paululum planiorem..." (1.19.32)
- 48. "...comitatur cruor: denique corpus...cernuat..." (1.19.34)
- 49. "...fenestras, quae foris...fores..." (1.21.36)
- 50. "...commodum cenare..." (1.22.38)
- 51. "...sessibula ac ne sufficientem supellectilem..." (1.23.38)
- 52. "...cum fide conde in illud cubiculum..." (1.24.40)
- 53. "...curamus...cupis, utique commodabimus..." (1.24.42)
- 54. "...planiorem piscibus, 'At has quisquiliis quanti parasti?'" (1.25.42)
- 55. "...parcitis, quod tam magnis pretiis pisces..." (1.25.42)
- 56. "...meo magisterio mali..." (1.25.44)
- 57. "{3} quod viae vexationem non cibo sed somno censerem." (1.26.44)
- 58. "...probe protuli, iam et...primoribus ac...praeside..." (1.26.44)
- 59. "...somno simul...cupidis cognoscendi..." (2.1.48) (2)
- 60. "...contamina totius orbis consono ore celebrentur..." (2.1.48)
- 61. "...suspensus alioquin et voto simul et studio, curiose singula." (2.1.48)
- 62. "...cupidinis meae reperto cuncta circumibam..." (2.2.50)
- 63. "...cetera corporis...congruentia..." (2.2.50)
- 64. "...nascetur numquam erit ut non..." (2.3.52)
- 65. "...paucis admodum confectis passibus ad...pervenimus." (2.4.52)
- 66. "...per singulos angulos stantibus attolerabant statuas..." (2.4.52)

67. "...summum specimen...signifex prodidit, sublatis..." (2.4.54)
68. "...prodidit...pectus arduis pedes imi...priores." (2.4.54)
69. "...saxo simul..." (2.4.54)
70. "...pote pignori meo longe provisum..." (2.5.56)
71. "...cupio; cave tibi, sed cave..." (2.5.56)
72. "...minus morigeros..." (2.5.56)
73. "...tibi trepido et cavenda censeo..." (2.5.56) (2)
74. "...comminus cum...congredere..." (2.6.58)
75. "...tuae tempera...fotis famula..." (2.6.58) (2)
76. "...collocavit et...cooperuit...capite..." (2.6.58)
77. "...leniter llubricans lumbis..." (2.7.58)
78. "...et publice prius intueri et domi postea perfrui..." (2.8.60)
79. "...vel quod praecipua pars ista corporis in aperto et perspicuo posita prima..." (2.8.60)
80. "...nitor nativus..." (2.8.60)
81. "...roseo rubore..." (2.8.60)
82. "...spoliaveris et faciem nativa specie nudaveris..." (2.8.60) (2)
83. "...choro stipata et toto Cupidinum populo comitata et balteo suo cincta, cinnama..." (2.8.62)
84. "...calva processerit, placere non poterit..." (2.8.62)
85. "...cum capillis color gratus..." (2.9.62)
86. "...caeruleos columbarum collis..." (2.9.62)
87. "...subole spissus..." (2.9.62)
88. "...vel prolixa serie porrectus dorsa permanat?" (2.9.62)
89. "...dependulos ac dein per...dispositos..." (2.9.62)
90. "...sensimque sinuato..." (2.9.62)
91. "...sustinere sed...summum..." (2.10.64)
92. "...Cave ne nimia mellis dulcedine diutinam...contrahas." (2.10.64) (2)
93. "...cum dicto...complexus coepi..." (2.10.64)
94. "...Immo iam dudum perii, nisi tu propitiaris..." (2.10.64)
95. "...meridies...et mittit mihi..." (2.11.64)
96. "...diem...dein cenae dedimus." (2.11.66)
97. "...monitorum memor..." (2.11.66)
98. "...quae cuncta caeli negotia et...candelabri contuetur." (2.11.66)
99. "...mirum licet modicum istum igniculum et manibus..." (2.12.66)
100. "...floridam, nunc...fabulam et...futurum." (2.12.68)
101. "...nomine nuncupatus..." (2.13.68)



102. "...nec ullus alius: nam...nos..." (2.13.68)
103. "...scaevam an saevam..." (2.13.68)
104. "...nomine negotiator..." (2.13.68)
105. "...dinumeratis centum denarium, quos mercedem divinationis..." (2.13.68)
106. "...mihi memora..." (2.13.70)
107. "...yehebamur, variis..." (2.14.70)
108. "...narrante...negotiator correptis nummulis..." (2.14.70)
109. "Ac dehinc tunc demum Diophanes..." (2.14.70)
110. "...circumsecus astantes in clarum cachinnum..." (2.14.70)
111. "...Milone...mihique non mediocriter..." (2.15.70)
112. "...sempileni, solam temperiem sustinentes..." (2.15.72)
113. "Commodum cubueram...cubitum..." (2.16.72)
114. "...serta et rosa soluta in sinu..." (2.16.72)
115. "...meae monstrans, 'Miserere,...' (2.16.74)
116. "...proelio...proximante...primam...praecordia..." (2.16.74)
117. "...sagittam saevi..." (2.16.74)
118. "...ne nervus rigoris nimietate..." (2.16.74)
119. "...crinem et capillo...complexas..." (2.16.74)
120. "...cum...cibariis vasculis..." (2.17.74)
121. "...raptim remotis laciniis cunctis suis renudata..." (2.17.74)
122. "...pulchre...paulisper...palmula potius..." (2.17.74)
123. "...super me sessim...subsiliens..." (2.17.74)
124. "...lassitudinem refoventes et libidinem..." (2.17.74)
125. "...die de me magno..." (2.18.74) (2)
126. "...Cave...cena..." (2.18.76)
127. "...pacem publicam infestat: passim trucidatos per medias plateas..." (2.18.76)
128. "...longinqua levare civitatem tanta glade..." (2.18.76) (2)
129. "...etiam peregrinationis poterit..." (2.18.76)
130. "...feminam flos ipse..." (2.19.76)
131. "...splendide...scitule subministrare..." (2.19.78)
132. "...pueri calamistrati pulchre...in pocula..." (2.19.78)
133. "...vini vetusti..." (2.19.78)
134. "...et ceteris operibus longe cunctas civitates..." (2.19.78)
135. "...praeterea pollemus..." (2.19.78)
136. "secessus sumus..." (2.19.78)



137. "...magis me liberum..." (2.20.78)
138. "...nam ne...rogis reliquiae..." (2.20.78) (2)
139. "...conferuntur: qui cunctorum obstinatione confusus..." (2.20.78)
140. "...suae salutis..." (2.20.80)
141. "...conformat...conclusis...ceteros..." (2.21.80)
142. "...meritoque ignoras...mulieres ora mortuorum..." (2.21.82)
143. "...facile frustrentur..." (2.22.82)
144. "...cave...civitatis filii cadaver...custodias..." (2.23.82)
145. "...flebilem fusca..." (2.23.84)
146. "...necessaria nobis..." (2.24.86)
147. "...et calida cum...et calice cenarumque..." (2.24.86)
148. "...loco congruentes luctus et lacrimas?" (2.24.86)
149. "...confestim et incluso custode cubiculo..." (2.24.86)
150. "...cantationibus, cum ecce crepusculum..." (2.25.86)
151. "...teque ad tui..." (2.25.86)
152. "...deus quidem Delphicus ipse facile discerneret, duobus..." (2.25.86)
153. "...magis mortuus..." (2.25.86)
154. "...Commodum...cantus perstrepebat cristatae cohortis..." (2.26.86)
155. "...cuncta convenerant..." (2.26.88)
156. "...diu deosculata..." (2.26.88)
157. "...statim summas..." (2.26.88)
158. "...manu mea...Domina, de..." (2.26.88) (2)
159. "...iuvenis Adonei vel musae vatis..." (2.26.88)
160. "...discerptus domo..." (2.26.88)
161. "...proxima platea..." (2.27.88)
162. "...pompa funeris publici...per..." (2.27.90)
163. "...per pietatem publicam perempto..." (2.27.90)
164. "...Sic ille senior...singulis..." (2.27.90)
165. "...ad criminis credulitatem impelli: conclamant..." (2.27.90)
166. "...propheta primarius...praemio pepigit reducere paulisper..." (2.28.90)
167. "...numina naturalia...per nocturna..." (2.28.92)
168. "...post Lethaea pocula iam Stygiis paludibus..." (2.29.92)
169. "...putas devotionibus meis posse Diras invocari, posse..." (2.29.94)
170. "...torum tepentem..." (2.29.94)

171. "...novae nuptae...artibus..." (2.29.94)
172. "...perlucide quod prorsus..." (2.30.94)
173. "...digito me demonstrans..." (2.30.94)
174. "...cum corporis mei custos..." (2.30.94)
175. "...prosectis...prius...pro..." (2.30.96)
176. "...deruunt. Ac dum directis digitis et detortis...denotor,  
dum...defluens..." (2.30.96)
177. "...cunabulis huius urbis conditus crastinus..." (2.31.96)
178. "...digitis pedum defunsis...defessi rediremus, dumque..."  
(2.32.98)
179. "...vegetes et vastulis...viribus..." (2.32.98)
180. "...vestigia mea vastis...vulneribus..." (2.32.98)
181. "...pedibus ac palmulis..." (3.1.100)
182. "...caedis cruore...civium..." (3.1.100)
183. "...pronuntiare poterit..." (3.1.100)
184. "...fortunas...fores interdum et frequenti..." (3.1.100)
185. "...nec mora, cum magna irruptione...magistratibus...mini-  
stris et turbae miscellaneae...magistratum...manu...me..."  
(3.2.100)
186. "...cuncta completa..." (3.2.100)
187. "...duo de..." (3.2.100)
188. "...pererratis plateis...piamentis minas portentorum..."  
(3.2.102)
189. "...praecone publico...cuncti consona...tantum theatro..."  
(3.2.102) (3)
190. "...clamante...cuncti consona...coetus..." (3.2.102)
191. "...passim populus procurrens caveae consaeptum mira celer-  
itate complevit..." (3.2.102) (2)
192. "...parva res ac praecipue pacem civitatis cunctae..."  
(3.3.104) (2)
193. "...sedulo singulos..." (3.3.104)
194. "...pro dignitate publica providere..." (3.3.104)
195. "...caedium...cruenter...commiserit..." (3.3.104)
196. "...putetis privatis...proprio..." (3.3.104)
197. "...namque nocturnae...nec..." (3.3.104)
198. "...cunctae civitatis...considerans circumirem, conspicio  
istum crudelissimum..." (3.3.104)
199. "...permotus statim profugit...praesidio...perpetem..."  
(3.3.104)
200. "...quae nihil impunitum nocentibus..." (3.3.104)
201. "...providentia...permittit, priusquam..." (3.3.104)

202. "...civium corporibus...caedis..." (3.4.106)
203. "...Sed si paulisper audientiam publica..." (3.4.106) (2)
204. "...cum a cena me..." (3.5.106)
205. "...metuens et hospitibus meis et mihi..." (3.5.108)
206. "...Dirigitur...denique dux..." (3.6.108)
207. "...validis me viribus..." (3.6.108)
208. "Ac mox alium pedibus meis mordicus..." (3.6.108)
209. "...commodis cunctis..." (3.6.110)
210. "...profatus...porrectisque in preces manibus, per publicam  
...per pignorum..." (3.7.110)
211. "...praesentem...providentiae, paulo...prorsus totum populum  
..." (3.7.110)
212. "...meum Milonem risu maximo..." (3.7.110)
213. "...Per publicam misericordiam, per..." (3.8.112)
214. "...sed una tantum subseciva sollicitudo..." (3.8.112)
215. "...factionis funditus formido perematur." (3.8.112)
216. "...mihi maestitia...mori..." (3.9.112)
217. "...pignorum meorum peremptorem...permittite..." (3.9.112)
218. "...me magistratus...mea manu..." (3.9.114)
219. "...maestumque me...tunc trepidum..." (3.10.116) (2)
220. "...contumeliae causa...pectore praesentem..." (3.11.116) (2)
221. "...procul perhorrescens..." (3.12.118)
222. "...rursum reverterim prae rubore..." (3.12.118)
223. "...cenula perfunctus, causatusque capitis acrem...concedo  
cubiculum..." (3.13.118)
224. "...contingat cutem..." (3.14.120)
225. "...fide memora...factum fati..." (3.14.120)
226. "...carissimum caput..." (3.14.120)
227. "...perniciem: porro..." (3.14.120)
228. "...semiadopertulos adnixis et gorbillantibus saviis sitien-  
ter hauriebam." (3.14.122)
229. "...profana petulantia..." (3.15.122)
230. "...meo manibus..." (3.15.122)
231. "...domus huius operta detergere et arcana dominae..."  
(3.15.122)
232. "...sacris...sanctam silentii..." (3.15.122)
233. "...consaeptum clausa custodias..." (3.15.122)
234. "...tenacitate taciturnitas tuae..." (3.15.122)
235. "...celerius sol caelo...cessisset...caliginem et...comminan-  
tem." (3.16.124)

236. "...conspexit, ac me capillos eius, qui iam caede cultro-  
rum desecti..." (3.16.124)
237. "...manu scrutatus e mediis papillis meis..." (3.16.124)
238. "...gesto graviter..." meae mores,..." (3.16.124) (2)
239. "...cum..." conspicio..." caprinos utres; quos cum probe con-  
strictos..." (3.17.124)
240. "...dominae meae dissimulata..." (3.17.126)
241. "...patore perflabili..." (3.17.126)
242. "...laminis litteratis..." (3.17.126)
243. "...durantibus damnis, defletorum..." (3.17.126)
244. "...carnosi clavi..." (3.17.126)
245. "...litat vario latice, nunc..." lacte..." libat..." (3.18.126)
246. "...nunc melle montano, libat et mulsa." (3.18.126)
247. "...et caeca numinum coactorum..." corpora..." (3.18.126)
248. "...dominam tuam..." divinae disciplinae..." (3.19.128)
249. "...verum yudis..." (3.19.128)
250. "...Scio..." sentio, cum semper alioquin spretorem..."  
(1.19.128)
251. "...nec larem requiro nec..." et nocte ista nihil antepono..."  
(3.19.128)
252. "...solitudinem semper..." solet huiusmodi secreta..." (3.20.  
128)
253. "...postulatum praeponam periculo..." (3.20.128)
254. "...promoveret, nocte proxima..." plumaturam..." (3.21.130)
255. "...pyxides plusculas..." (3.21.130)
256. "...promicant molles plumulae, crescunt et fortes pinnulae  
..." (3.21.130)
257. "...periclitabunda paulatim..." (3.21.130)
258. "...mea mellitula..." mancipium..." (3.22.132)
259. "...perpetuo pignera..." perficie..." pinnatus." (3.22.132)
260. "...meum..." me..." meae Fotidi malle..." (3.23.132)
261. "...paene praeterivi..." (3.23.134)
262. "...salubri possem subsistere Specta..." (3.23.134)
263. "...prius..." prosperis..." propere..." (3.24.134)
264. "...pinnulae..." plane pili..." (3.24.134)
265. "...cuncta corporis mei considero..." (3.25.136)
266. "...festinatio fefellit..." (3.25.136)
267. "...Diu denique ac multum mecum..." (3.26.136) (2)
268. "...facinerosissimamque feminam..." feriens..." (3.26.136)

269. "...melior me...morte multata..." (3.26.138)
270. "...loca lautia..." (3.26.138)
271. "...cum asino capita conferunt...consentiunt..." (3.26.138)
272. "...verentes...vix me praesepio videre..." (3.26.138)
273. "...praesidio, pronus...prioribus pedibus anniti poteram..." (3.27.140)
274. "...scilicet sorte conantem servulus..." (3.27.140)
275. "...frondosum fustem..." (3.27.140)
276. "...clamorem...caedentes...corium nec cribris..." (3.29.142)
277. "...praeteriremus...prospexi...praeter..." (3.29.142)
278. "...faciem faena..." (3.29.142)
279. "...primus aditus et sermo prolixus...praestabant..." (4.1.144)
280. "...in pratam proximum passim libero pastui..." (4.1.144)
281. "...sed plane pone stabulum prospectum..." (4.1.144)
282. "...comprecatus omnes cuncta...conterminis in hortulis candens..." (4.1.144)
283. "...repperirem rosarium..." (4.1.144)
284. "...varias herbularas et laetissima virecta..." (4.2.146)
285. "...faciem prolixae feliatae...floris..." (4.2.146)
286. "...prolixae feliatae pariunt in...porrectos..." (4.2.146)
287. "...vocabulo vulgus..." (4.2.146)
288. "...salutem recusans sponde...sumere..." (4.3.146)
289. "...pedum posterioribus..." (4.3.146)
290. "...conclamant canes..." (4.3.148)
291. "...modo magnum et numero multos..." (4.3.148)
292. "...ad compugnandum...convocatos...ere nata capto consilio ..." (4.3.148)
293. "...fluxu saucia, fimo fistulatim..." (4.3.148)
294. "...fustim fatigatus..." (4.4.148)
295. "...mereri causariam missionem...morae..." (4.4.150)
296. "...festinatae fugae..." (4.4.150)
297. "...dorsi mei sarcinam duobus...distributuros..." (4.4.150)
298. "...vindictae vicem lupis et vulturis..." (4.4.150)
299. "...distributis, destricto..." (4.5.150)
300. "...poplites eius totos amputant, ac paululum a via retractum per altissimum praeceps in vallem proximam...praecipitant." (4.5.150)
301. "...fraudibus...frugi..." (4.5.150)

302. "...liberatus lassitudinem vice lavacri..." (4.5.152)
303. "...cingitur, convalles lacunosae cavaeque..." (4.6.152)
304. "...delapsus...dispersus...stagnantibus...stipati..."  
(4.6.152) (2)
305. "...cuncta cohibebat..." (4.6.152)
306. "...qua margines montanae..." (4.6.152)
307. "...caulae firma solidis cratibus...commoda..." (4.6.152)
308. "...casula cannulis temere contacta...comperi..." (4.6.152)
309. "...senio, cui soli salus..." (4.7.152)
310. "...fortissimi fidelissimique..." (4.7.154)
311. "...suavi sapore percocta...sunt..." (4.7.154)
312. "...percocta pulmenta praesto sunt...panis..." (4.7.154)
313. "...vasculorum vestisque..." (4.8.154)
314. "...simili...sociorum sese..." (4.8.154)
315. "...potatur incondite pulmentis acervatim, panibus aggeratim, poculis..." (4.8.154)
316. "...cantillant, conviciis...cetera..." (4.8.154)
317. "...duce...deminuti debilem..." (4.8.156)
318. "...Nec nos...nummularius..." (4.9.156)
319. "...qui metu officiorum ac munerum publicorum magnis artibus magnam." (4.9.156)
320. "...solus ac solitarius parva sed satis..." (4.9.156)
321. "...placuit ad hunc primum...pugna...potiremur..." (4.9.158)
322. "...videbatur, ne vulvarum...viciniam..." (4.10.158)
323. "...et singula rerum sentiens...silentium..." (4.10.158)
324. "...possideri: sic unusquisque proximi periculi..." (4.10.158)
325. "...validum eo volente..." (4.11.158)
326. "...raptim reportamus; ac, dum trepidi religionis..."  
(4.11.158-60)
327. "...commilitonem cruciatu simul et captivitate..." (4.11.160)
328. "Sat se...socia..." (4.11.160)
329. "...parricidium suadens persuadere posset..." (4.11.160)
330. "...vigore venerato corpus reliquum veste..." (4.11.160)
331. "...convolutum mari celandum commisimus..." (4.11.160)
332. "...stragulam subductam scilicet iactare similiter..."  
(4.12.160)
333. "...debuisset...dispergere...destinaret...deprecatur..."  
(4.12.160)

334. "...non sociis suis sed...suspendit se fenestra sagaciter  
..." (4.12.162)
335. "...strenuque quidem sed satis improvidere conantem senile  
..." (4.12.162)
336. "...pulsu...prospectu alioquin altonitum praeceps inegit;  
qui praeter..." (4.12.162)
337. "...plaga petiti...Plateas proximam..." (4.13.162)
338. "...conatibus...conscendimus civitatem..." (4.13.162)
339. "...primarius et opibus plurimus et liberatitate praecipuus  
..." (4.13.162)
340. "...probatae pernecitatis, alibi noxii perdita..." (4.13.162)
341. "...securitate suis epulis bestiarum saginas..." (4.13.162-4)
342. "...pigra etiam...pestilentia paene..." (4.14.164)
343. "...Passim per plateas plurimas..." (4.14.164)
344. "...ceteris sarcina corporis...cibo..." (4.14.164)
345. "...carnibus corium, servatis sollerter..." (4.14.164) (2)
346. "...capite adusque confinium cervicis..." (4.14.164)
347. "...numero nostro, non..." (4.14.166)
348. "...circum fluentis densitate...confinium gulae, qua cervix  
..." (4.15.166)
349. "...caput subire cogimus,...circa..." (4.15.166)
350. "...prorsus...praestinatae pretio..." (4.15.166)
351. "...provecta vespera, abusi praesidio..." (4.16.168)
352. "...miratus bestiae magnitudinem...liberalitate laetatus...  
gaudii sui gerulis..." (4.16.168) (3)
353. "...confluebant, quorum satis callenter curiosos..." (4.16.168)
354. "...diligentia deportari..." (4.16.168)
355. "...potius domus  tuae patulum ac per flabilem..." (4.17.168)
356. "...capto...cavea statimque custodes..." (4.18.170)
357. "...concitaret, non obdito cellae...cohiberet?" (4.18.172)
358. "...socios nostros suspensus opperior, quidam servulus,  
strepitu scilicet..." (4.19.172)
359. "...fuga domo facesso..." (4.20.172)
360. "...scaenam...sponte sumpserat..." (4.20.172)
361. "...publica potitus...potuit..." (4.20.174)
362. "...cuncti canes...copiosi..." (4.20.174)
363. "...catervis canum saevientium cinctum..." (4.20.174)
364. "Tanto tamen terrore tantaque...turbaverat..." (4.21.174)
365. "...solus potitus galiare se cenasse cenas..." (4.22.176)

366. "...cenasse cenas crederet..." (4.22.176)
367. "...fuerant, fauces diutina fame..." (4.22.176)
368. "...seque ad sectae sueta..." (4.24.180)
369. "...cum repente lymphatico ritu somno recussa est..." (4.25.180)
370. "...postliminio pressae quietis lamentationes licentiosas..." (4.25.180) (2)
371. "...'Parce', inquit 'Mi parens et durissimo casui meo, pietatis...paululum;...' (4.26.182)
372. "...specta denique scaenam meae calamitatis: speciosus..." (4.26.182)
373. "...civitas cooptavit, meus alioquin consobrinus..." (4.26.182)
374. "...contubernio domusculae, immo vero cubiculi torique sanctae caritatis..." (4.26.182)
375. "...pigneratus, votisque nuptialibus pacto iugali pridem destinatus..." (4.26.182)
376. "...conglobatoque cuneo cubiculum..." (4.26.182)
377. "...Sed ecce saevissimo somnio..." (4.27.184)
378. "...permotus saxo grandi pro pedibus..." (4.27.184)
379. "...misellum iuvenem maritum meum..." (4.27.184)
380. "...vel in voluptatem Veneriam..." (4.27.184)
381. "...puellae iunioris tam praecipua, tam praeclara pulchritudo." (4.28.186)
382. "...profundum pelagi peperit..." (4.28.186)
383. "...conversari populi coetibus, vel certe rursum novo caelestium..." (4.28.186)
384. "...Venerem aliam, virginali flore praeditam, pullulasse..." (4.28.186) (2)
385. "...procedit...proxumas et terrae plusculum provinciasque plurimas fama porrecta pervagatur..." (4.29.186)
386. "...Virginis victimis et epulis Veneris..." (4.29.188)
387. "...propitiatur, iamque per plateas commeantem populi..." (4.29.188)
388. "...prisca parens...puella partiario..." (4.30.188)
389. "...formositatis aemulatione fabula gemens ac fremens..." (4.31.190)
390. "...parenti sed plenam tribue et in pulchritudinem..." (4.31.190)
391. "...Psyche...perspicua pulchritudine...percipit..." (4.32.192)
392. "...domi residens deflet desertam..." (4.32.192)
393. "...fatigat flammaque et ferro..." (4.33.194)



394. "...prosequente populo vivum producitur..." (4.34.194)
395. "...sors addixit scopulo sistite..." (4.34.196)
396. "...pompaie populi prosequentiis..." (4.35.196)
397. "...cuius in summo cacumine statutam puellam cuncti..." (4.35.196)
398. "...citro et ebore curiose cavata, subeunt aureae columnae..." (5.1.200)
399. "...longe lateque dispositae domus sine pretio pretiosae..." (5.1.202) (2)
400. "...voluptate visenti offert sese vox quaedam..." (5.2.202)
401. "...statim proximo semiotundo suggestu..." (5.3.202)
402. "...serviente sed tantum spiritu quodam impulsa, subministrantur..." (5.3.204)
403. "...cautela censeo..." (5.5.206)
404. "...carceris custodia saepta et humanae conversationis colloquio..." (5.5.206)
405. "...mora, cum paulo maturius lectum maritus..." (5.6.206)
406. "...memineris meae seriae monitionis..." (5.6.206)
407. "...ac saepe terruit, nequando sororum pernicioso consilio suasa..." (5.6.208)
408. "...simili vectura sorores hic mihi sistat..." (5.6.208)
409. "...Mi mellite, me marite..." (5.6.208)
410. "...penetrabili vocis ululabilis per prona...Psyche procurrit..." (5.7.210)
411. "...lugetis adsum. Lugubres voces desinite, et diutinis lacrimis..." (5.7.210) (2)
412. "...saviis sese perfruuntur, et illae sedatae..." (5.7.210)
413. "...praeceptum ullo pacto temerat vel pectoris..." (5.8.210)
414. "...ut utroque parente prognatae diversam sortem sustineremus?" (5.9.212) (2)
415. "...Sic et Hercule, sic se..." (5.9.212)
416. "...seniorem maritum sortita sum..." (5.9.212)
417. "...cucurbita calviorem..." (5.9.212)
418. "...puero pusilliore..." (5.9.214)
419. "...cunctam domum seris et catenis obditam custodientem..." (5.9.214)
420. "...detortos et duratos in lapidem digitos..." (5.10.214)
421. "...Placet pro bono duabus malis malum..." (5.11.216) (2)
422. "...dolore raptim deterrentes, vesania turgidae domus suas contendunt dolum..." (5.11.216)
423. "...guis illis nocturnis sermonibus sic..." (5.11.216)

424. "...posthac pessimae..." (5.11.216)
425. "...si texeris nostra secreta silentio, divinum, si profana-  
veris, mortalem." (5.11.216)
426. "...gloria gestiebat et materni nominis dignitate gaudebat  
..." (5.11.218)
427. "...et castra commovit et aciem direxit et classicum..."  
(5.12.218)
428. "...vel videas vel...Sirenum scopulo prominentes funestis  
vocibus saxa..." (5.12.218) (2)
429. "Suscipit Psyche singultu lacrimoso sermonem..." (5.13.218)
430. "...sacrosanctae imaginis tuae redde saltem conspectum  
sororum..." (5.13.218)
431. "...susceptas cas gremio spirantis aurae solo reddidit..."  
(5.14.220)
432. "...simulata paulatim sororis invadunt animum, statimque  
eas lassitudine viae sedilibus..." (5.15.222)
433. "...choros canere, cantatur: quae cuncta nullo..." (5.15.222)
434. "...suum de provincia proxima magnis pecuniis..." (5.15.222)
435. "...spiritu sublimatae domum redeunt, sic secum..." (5.16.222)
436. "...perditae matutino scopulum pervolant et inde solito  
venit praesidio..." (5.17.224)
437. "...pressura palpebrarum coactis, hoc astu puellam..."  
(5.17.224)
438. "...doloris casusque tui, celare possumus immanem colubrum..."  
(5.17.224)
439. "...sed cum primum praegnationem tuam plenus..." (5.18.226)
440. "...nobiscum secura periculi vivere, an saevissimae bestiae  
sepeliri..." (5.18.226)
441. "...unquam viri mei vidi faciem vel..." (5.19.226)
442. "...vobis merito consentio: meque magnopere..." (5.19.226)
443. "...sola deducit ite ad salutem diu diuque..." (5.20.228)
444. "...impulsu solito porrectae super scopulum..." (5.21.230)
445. "...profecto fecisset, nisi ferrum timore tanti flagitii..."  
(5.22.230)
446. "...timore tanti flagitii manibus temerariis..." (5.22.230)
447. "...defecta dum saepius divini..." (5.22.232)
448. "...de pharetra sagittam et puncto pollicis extremam aciem  
periclitabunda..." (5.23.232)
449. "...summa luminis sui stillam ferventis olei super..."  
(5.23.232)
450. "...et per nubilas plagas penduli comitatus." (5.24.234)

451. "...prostrata et quantum visu poterat volatus mariti prospiciens..." (5.25.234)
452. "...plumae raptum maritum proceritas..., per proximi fluminis marginem praecipitem..." (5.25.234)
453. "...profecto prudentes viri...et saepius vacillante vestigio..." (5.25.236) (2)
454. "...pone maerorem precibusque potius Cupidinem deorum maximum percole..." (5.25.236)
455. "...quae mariti mentito nomine mecum..." (5.26.238)
456. "...e re concin nato mendacio fallens maritum, quasi de morte..." (5.27.238)
457. "...mortua pervenire potuit: nam per saxa..." (5.27.240)
458. "'Domina, puto puellam illum si probe..." (5.28.242)
459. "...mei paelicatus puellas propinare consuesti..." (5.30.244)
460. "...litatum crediderim, cum eius comas..." (5.30.244)
461. "Ardenti prorsus isto meo pectori violentiam scilicet perpetraturae..." (5.30.246)
462. "...oro, vestris viribus Psychen illam fugitivam volaticam..." (5.30.246)
463. "...meae famosa fabula et non dicendi filii mei facta..." (5.30.246)
464. "...hominum patietur passim cupidines populis disseminantem..." (5.31.248)
465. "...precibus propitiare. Et prospecto..." (6.1.250)
466. "...meus degat dominus?' et illico dirigit..." (6.1.250)
467. "...remota rite componit, rata scilicet..." (6.1.250)
468. "...sollicite seduloque curantem Qeres..." (6.1.250) (2)
469. "...dies delitescam, quoad deae..." (6.2.252)
470. "...commoveor et opitulari cupio; sed cognatae..." (6.3.252)
471. "...subsitae convallis sublucidum lucum prospicit fanum sollerti fabrica structum..." (6.3.254)
472. "...sive tu Sami, quae sola..." (6.4.254)
473. "...virginem vectura leonis caelo commeantem..." (6.4.254) (2)
474. "...modum supplicanti statim sese..." (6.4.254)
475. "...tota spe salutis deposita, sic ipsa suas..." (6.6.256)
476. "...praeconio praemium investigationis publicitus..." (6.7.258)
477. "Fac ergo mandatum matures meum et indicia,..." (6.7.258)
478. "...per omnium ora populorum passim..." (6.8.258)
479. "...retro metas Murtias Mercurium..." (6.8.260)
480. "...septem savia suavia..." (6.8.260)

481. "...partum omnino perferre te patiemur..." (6.9.262)
482. "...capilloque discisso et capite conquassato..." (6.10.262)
483. "...seminum cumulo ipsa cenae nuptiali concessit..." (6.10.262)
484. "...convocat corrogatque cunctam..." (6.10.264)
485. "...puellae lepidae, periclitanti prompta..." (6.10.264)
486. "...summoque studio singulae..." (6.10.264)
487. "...unici cubiculi custodia clausus coercebatur acriter..." (6.11.264)
488. "...tua misserrima morte meas..." (6.12.266)
489. "...poteris sub illa procerissima platano..." (6.12.266)
490. "...furatrina facili flaventis auri..." (6.13.268)
491. "...saltem secundi laboris periculum secundum..." (6.13.268)
492. "...Nam si spiritus corpore tuo semel seiugatis..." (6.17.272)
493. "...cui praefectus Charon protenus expetens portorium..." (6.18.274)
494. "...opipare suadeat sumere. Sed..." (6.19.276)
495. "...sagittae suae suscitat..." (6.21.278)
496. "...modestiae meae memor quodque..." (6.22.280)
497. "...puella praepollet pulchritudine, praesentis..." (6.22.280)
498. "...pro sede sublimi sedens..." (6.23.282)
499. "...matrimonio mortali metuas..." (6.23.282)
500. "...saltavit: scaena sibi sic concinata..." (6.24.284)
501. "...mihi mortis, et ipse mecum..." (6.26.286)
502. "...proximas et praeacutas in his prominentes silices..." (6.26.286)
503. "...posteriorum pedum calcibus protinus..." (6.27.288)
504. "...studio, sed et plagarum suasurae me saepiculae..." (6.28.288)
505. "...An tu probissima puella, parentes tuos intervisere properabus?" (6.30.292)
506. "...praesidium praestabimus et ad parentes..." (6.30.292)
507. "At paulo ante pinnatum Pegasi..." (6.30.294)
508. "...certe calculo cunctorum..." (6.31.294)
509. "...cruciatum, cum canes..." (6.32.296)
510. "...candidum solis curriculum cuncta collustrabat..." (7.1.298)
511. "...cuiusmodi consilium caperent..." (7.1.298)
512. "...congruo cunctae multitudinis consensu..." (7.1.298)
513. "...salute commilitonum sollicite sciscitari..." (7.4.304)

514. "...praemio provocari posse, nec paucoa..." (7.4.304)
515. "...nam procuratorem principis ducenaria perfunctum..." (7.6.306)
516. "...Caesaris clarus atque conspicuus..." (7.6.306)
517. "...periculorum particeps et pro..." (7.6.308)
518. "...cubiculum clamoribus inquietis cuncta..." (7.7.308)
519. "...textili contecto capite, calceis..." (7.8.310)
520. "...ceteri cruciantes mora consilii..." (7.10.314)
521. "...simulato, lupanaris spurci sordidique subito..." (7.10.314)
522. "...verum etiam voluptatem vestrarum." (7.11.314)
523. "...provolutosque in proximas rupinas praecipites..." (7.13.320)
524. "...ac maritum mihi meminisse..." (7.14.320)
525. "...illa mulier molae machinariae..." (7.15.322)
526. "...domi forisque fortibus factis..." (7.16.324)
527. "...facto foramine, immo fovea vel etiam fenestra..." (7.17.326)
528. "...stuppae garcinae me satis..." (7.19.328)
529. "...campis sub patentibus, ex summo studio..." (7.24.336)
530. "...perhibere posset; profecto..." (7.25.338)
531. "...sed scilicet senectam..." (7.27.340)
532. "...istam culpa carere, cum propugnare pedibus et arcere morsibus misello puero potueris?..." (7.27.340) (3)
533. "...inter praecipuos procos summo studio..." (8.2.344) (2)
534. "...etiam cena poculoque communi carior cariorque..." (8.2.346)
535. "...Diu denique deliberaverat..." (8.3.348)
536. "...aditus copia custodientium cerneret novaeque..." (8.3.348)
537. "...squalidus, setis insurgentibus spinae hispidus..." (8.4.350)
538. "...vel suae saevitiae litatum saltem tanto periculo..." (8.5.352)
539. "...sollerter affinxit; sed solae..." (8.6.352)
540. "...furibundo per plateas populosas..." (8.6.352)
541. "...confluunt civium maestae catervae..." (8.6.352)
542. "...spiritu totam se super..." (8.6.354)
543. "...feralem pompam prosequente populo deducitur..." (8.6.354)
544. "...instantia pervicaci, partim per semet..." (8.7.356)

545. "...capillos distrahentem non dubitavit de nuptiis..." (8.8.356)
546. "...metu praedicti periculi quantum pote turbae..." (8.16.370)
547. "...iamque me cursu celeri ceteros..." (8.16.370)
548. "...sed et saxa, quae salebrosa semita largiter subministra-  
bat..." (8.16.372)
549. "...potissimum caveremus clade, comminus canum..." (8.17.374)
550. "...ungulis debilem et dolore deformem et in..." (8.23.382)
551. "...ille cachinnos circumstantibus commovebat..." (8.24.384)
552. "...dea Syria et sanctus Sabadius..." (8.25.386)
553. "...corpulentus, choraula doctissimus, collaticia...circum-  
gestantibus deam cornu canens..." (8.26.388)
554. "...flagrorum solum spurcitia sanguinis..." (8.28.392)
555. "...esurientem suo satiaret sacrificio, probeque..." (8.29.392)
556. "...non meae solutis sed simulacri iacentis..." (8.30.394)
557. "...paulo ante per posticam..." (9.2.402)
558. "...pellucidae de proxumo petitae fonte..." (9.4.404)
559. "...et quidvis aliud periclitantium placide patiebar..." (9.4.404-5)
560. "...cum crotalis et cymbalis circumforaneum mendicabulum..." (9.4.406)
561. "...purgandum demonstrat digito suo, donec utroque..." (9.7.410)
562. "...illud sui scleris, quod simultatione sollemnium..." (9.9.414)
563. "...mater sorori suae deae Syriae..." (9.10.414)
564. "...pistor de proximo castello praestinavit, protinusque..." (9.10.416)
565. "...loca lautia prolixe praebuit..." (9.11.416) (2)
566. "...utique leviozem laborem legatum iri..." (9.11.418)
567. "...et miserum maritum decipiens matutino mero..." (9.14.422)
568. "Talis illa mulier miro me persequabatur odio..." (9.15.422)
569. "...saevitia multo mihi magis..." (9.15.422)
570. "...ex summo studio, si tamen..." (9.15.422)
571. "...necessariam profectionem pararet pudicitiamque carae  
conjugis conservare..." (9.17.426) (2)
572. "...raptim tunicas iniectus sed plane prae turbatione pedi-  
bus..." (9.20.430-1)
573. "...et cetera consequenter suspicatus sagaciter..." (9.21.432)
574. <sup>(2)</sup> "...solito sermone salutem ei..." (9.25.438)

575. "...suo pudore postposito..." (9.26.440)
576. "...Matutino me multis..." (9.32.450)
577. "...ut suo saltem sepulchro paternum..." (9.35.454)
578. "...denique vicinum illum auriculis per suos servulos sublatum..." (9.36.456)
579. "Qui simul signo solito pastorum..." (9.36.456)
580. "...obvolutisque lacinia laevis manibus lapidum..." (9.37.458)
581. "...licet privato suis possessionibus paupere..." (9.38.460)
582. "...prioris plagae vulnere prolapsum..." (9.39.464)
583. "...precibus mitigari militem magisque in..." (9.40.464)
584. "...si surrexisset, sese concisurum eum..." (9.40.464)
585. "...accersitis magistratibus mentiuntur sese multi..." (9.41.466)
586. "...Qua contentione et clamoso strepitu cognito, curiosus alioquin..." (9.42.468)
587. "...sedulo composuerat. Confecta campestri nec adeo..." (10.1.472)
588. "...sed in domo cuiusdam decurionis devertimus..." (10.1.472)
589. "...Veneriae cupidinis comprehensio, cum videas..." (10.2.474)
590. "...etiam tunc sequius suspicatus, summisso..." (10.3.476)
591. "...nam quod nemo novit..." (10.3.478)
592. "...concederetur spatium, statimque se refert a..." (10.4.478)
593. "Ac dum de oblationis opportunitate... forte fortuna puer... propius pessimae feminae filius..." (10.5.480) (3)
594. "Illicoque repentina pueri perniciie paedagogus..." (10.5.480)
595. "...iussus praeco pronuntiat patres in..." (10.7.484)
596. "...vel confertae conspectu curiae vel certe..." (10.7.486)
597. "...sua postremum manu porrexerit puero." (10.7.486)
598. "...sectae crederem convenire causas ulli..." (10.11.492)
599. "...et illius quidem senis famosa atque fabulosa fortuna..." (10.12.494)
600. "...At ego tunc temporis talibus fatorum..." (10.13.494)
601. "...ille porcorum, pullorum, piscium et..." (10.13.496)
602. "...cubiculo proxime consistens coram arbitratur." (10.16.500)
603. "...Magno denique delibutus gaudio dominus..." (10.17.502)
604. "...sublatis primoribus pedibus perdocuit..." (10.17.502)
605. "...cum nil novi nihilque..." (10.21.508)
606. "...post tantum temporis tam..." (10.21.508)
607. "...liberto magnifice munerato destinat me..." (10.23.510)
608. "...cuius pater peregre proficiscens mandavit..." (10.23.512)



609. "...ut si sexus sequioris..." (10.23.512)
610. "...marito natam necatamque nuntiavit..." (10.23.512)
611. "...vicinam puellam parentumque praesidio..." (10.23.514)
612. "...dehinc detestari, dehinc..." (10.24.514)
613. "...salutifera potione pestem praecedentis..." (10.26.518)
614. "...sui similis, fidei supprimens faciem..." (10.27.520)
615. "...iam certo certior contendit ad..." (10.28.522)
616. "...efficit statim sibi simul..." (10.28.522)
617. "...caveae prosequente populo pompatico favore..." (10.29.524)
618. "...oculos patenta porta spectaculi prospectu..." (10.29.524)
619. "...corpus candidum quod caelo demeat..." (10.31.528)
620. "...doctrinaque praepollens Palamedes proditionis damnatur..." (10.33.532)
621. "...petiturus, iam populo postulante, illam de..." (10.34.534)
622. "...ego prater pudorem obeundi publice concubitus..." (10.34.536)
623. "...metu etiam mortis maxime cruciabar..." (10.34.536)
624. "...meo laceraret mulierem mihi vero..." (10.34.536)
625. "...paulatim furtivum pedem proferens portam, quae proxima est, potitus..." (10.35.536)
626. "...cladibus satiato et spem salutis, licet tardam..." (11.1.538)
627. "...impetus comprimens terraeque claustra cohibens..." (11.2.540)
628. "...quae sunt sequentia sacerdoti meo per..." (11.6.548)
629. "...Ecce pompae magnae paulatim praecedunt anteludia..." (11.8.552)
630. "...miratusque congruentiam mandati muneris..." (11.13.560)
631. "...pedum plantae per ungulas in..." (11.13.560)
632. "...quid potissimum praefarer primarium..." (11.14.560)
633. "...monitu cognitis ab origine cunctis cladibus meis..." (11.14.560)
634. "...quem diverse distractum notae dorsualis..." (11.20.572)
635. "...dies mihi magis magisque accipiendorum..." (11.21.572)
636. "...quippe cum aviditati contumaciaeque summe cavere..." (11.21.574)
637. "...quam cultores ceteri cibis profanis..." (11.21.574)
638. "...partim ipse, partim per meos socios..." (11.23.578)
639. "...pone tergum talorum tenus pretiosa..." (11.24.580)
640. "...et caput decere corona cinxerat..." (11.24.582)



641. "...tenue tuis transcurrit..." (11.25.582)  
 642. "...aliquo sui signo subministraret, sinistri..." (11.27.588)  
 643. "...perfectis salutationibus summo studio percontabar..."  
 (11.27.588)  
 644. "...cui statim sua sacra deberet ministrare;..." (11.27.588)  
 645. "...Nec levi cura sollicitus sed oppido suspensus anmim  
mecum..." (11.29.590)

### III. Antithesis: Opposition of ideas and/or sound

1. "...tuas benivolas lepidi...non spreveris inspicere..."  
 (1.1.2)
2. "...ardua montium et lubrica vallium..." (1.2.4)
3. "...Istud mendacium tam verum est...quam si quis velit dicere  
magico susurramine omnes agiles reverti, mare pigrum colli-  
gari, ventos inanimes exprirare; solem inhiberi, lunam de-  
spumari, stellas evelli, diem tolli, noctem teneri..." (1.3.6)
4. "...infesto devorasse ac mox eundem invitamento exiguae stipis  
venatoriam lanceam qua parte minatur exitium..." (1.4.8)
5. "...potens caelum deponere, terram suspendere, fontes durare,  
montes diluere, manes sublimare, deos infirmare, sidera ex-  
tinguere, Tartarum ipsum illuminare..." (1.8.14)
6. "...bona uxor et mala fortuna perduxit..." (1.7.14)
7. "...Mira nec minus saeva..." (1.11.20)
8. "...non parvam incussisti sollicitudinem, immo vero formidi-  
nem, iniecto non scrupulo sed lancea..." (1.11.20)
9. "...nam ut lacrimae saepicule de gaudio prodeunt, ita et in  
illo nimio pavore risum nequivi continere..." (1.12.20)
10. "...praecedentis dicacitatis et instantis curiositatis  
paeniteat..." (1.12.22)
11. "...quasi recens utero matris editus, immo vero semimortuus..."  
 (1.14.24)
12. "...ac recordabar profecto bonam Meroen non miserericordia  
iugulo meo pepercisse sed saevitia cruci me reservasse..."  
 (1.15.26)
13. "...ac neque deorsum demeare neque sursum remeare posset..."  
 (1.19.32)
14. "...et quod in ceteris membris floridae vestis hilaris color,  
hoc in capite nitor nativus operatur;..." (1.8.60)
15. "...magis de cutis roseo rubore quam de vestis aureo colore  
placiturae..." (1.8.60)

16. "...nisi capillum distinexerit, ornata non possit audire..." (2.9.62)
17. "Sed in mea...gratiam." (2.9.62)
18. "...oris inhalatu cinnameo et occursantis linguae illisu nectareo..." (2.10.64)
19. "...ac si in Avernum lacum formidans deieceram..." (2.11.66)
20. "Prima huiusce...velut sui parentis." (2.12.66)
21. "...non parvas stipes, immo vero mercedes opimas..." (2.13.68)
22. "...nec animo tantum verum etiam corpore ipso..." (2.16.72)
23. "...nam ut vides, proelio...sagittam saevi Cupidinis..." (2.16.74)
24. "...in speciem Veneris quae marinos fluctus subit..." (2.17.74)
25. "...proeliare et fortiter proeliare..." (2.17.74)
26. "...etiam in maeore luculentam proferens faciem..." (2.23.84)
27. "...in modum iuvenis Adonei vel musae vatis Pimpleidos..." (2.26.88)
28. "...per pietatem publicam...feminam severiter vindicate..." (2.27.90)
29. "...Non obnitimur, nec terrae rem...,sed..." (2.28.92)
30. "...hi pessimam feminam viventum statim cum corpore mariti sepeliendam, alii mendacio cadaveris fidem non habendam." (2.29.94)
31. "...in exanimis umbrae modum..." (2.30.96)
32. "...in vicem Geryonae caedis..." (2.32.98)
33. "...revulsum nox diei reddidit..." (3.1.100)
34. "...guttatim defluo infusa aqua..." (3.3.104)
35. "...Neque parva nec ac praecipue pacem civitatis cunctae..." (3.3.104)
36. "...ne nefarius homicida tot caedium lanienam, quam cruenter exercuit, impune commiserit." (3.3.104)
37. "...profugit...delituit..." (3.3.104)
38. "Nec me putetis privatis simultatibus instinctum odio proprio saevire: sum namque nocturnae custodiae praefectus, nec in..." (3.3.104)
39. "...quae nihil impunitum nocentibus permittit..." (3.3.104)
40. "At ego nihil tunc temporis amplius quam flere poteram, non tam Hercule truculentam accusationem intuens quam..." (3.4.106)
41. "Nec ipse ignoro,...quamvis vera dicat...tamen tantae multitudini...non meo merito..." (3.4.106)
42. "Sic salvi recedemus, si salvum in domo neminem reliquerimus." (3.5.108)
43. "...non tantum impunem me,...qui ne tantillo quidem..." (3.6.108)

44. "...at ille non contentus quod mihi nec assistendi solacium perhibuit, insuper..." (3.7.110)
45. "Augetur oppido, immo duplicatur...mori non licuerit..." (3.9.112)
46. "Tunc ille...cohibitus risus libere iam exarsit..." (3.10.114)
47. "Fixus in lapidem steti gladius, nihil secus quam una de ceteris..." (3.10.114)
48. "...nec tamen indignationem iniuriae, quae...,ullo modo par-mulcere quivit." (3.10.116)
49. "...nec umquam patietur ut ex animo doleas, sed frontem..." (3.11.116)
50. "...nec ipse discedit nec me digredi patitur..." (3.12.118)
51. "...non enim laeta facie nec sermone dicaculo, sed vultuosam frontem..." (3.13.120)
52. "...perfida muliere vindictam, immo vero licet...Nec tamen..." (3.13.120)
53. "...quod non celerius sol caelo ruisset...ipsi..." (3.16.124)
54. "...iam de fuga consilium tenebam, sed..." (3.16.124)
55. "...ne prorsus vacuis manibus redirem..." (3.17.124)
56. "...in insani modum Aiacis armatus..." (3.18.126)
57. "...non ut ille vivis pecoribus infestus...sed longe fortius..." (3.18.126)
58. "...non homicidam nunc sed utricidam amplecterer..." (3.18.128)
59. "...ad exemplum duodenti laboris Herculei...Geryonis...Cer-beri..." (3.19.128)
60. "...in servilem modum addictum..." (3.19.128)
61. "...iam denique nec Larem requiro nec domuitionem paro et nocte ista nihil antepono." (3.19.128)
62. "...nullo decantatus...quaerebam." (3.22.132)
63. "...quamvis ipsius aquilae...et supremi Iovis certus nuntius..." (3.23.132)
64. "...me nullam aliam meae Fotidi malle..." (3.23.132)
65. "...nec istud factum putes ulla benivolentia, sed..." (3.23.132)
66. "...nec ullae plumulae nec usquam pinnulae, sed..." (3.24.134)
67. "...nec ullum miserae..., nisi..." (3.24.136)
68. "...non avem me sed asinum video..." (3.25.136)
69. "...et pro Lucio iumentum sensum tamen retinebam humanum." (3.26.136)
70. "...an nequissimam...et mordicus...sed ab incepto..." (3.26.136-8)
71. "...coruscat in modum ortivi solis ignis et mucro..." (3.28.140)

72. "...nihil a mortuo differebam..." (3.29.142)
73. "...nec cribris iam idoneum relinquunt..." (3.29.142)
74. "...multas villulas et casas amplas..." (3.29.142)
75. "...non illas rosas..., at ne convallem..., nisi..." (4.2.146)
76. "...nullis verberibus ad...immo etiam...sed machaera..."  
(4.4.150)
77. "Sed tamen bellum consilium meum praevertit sors deterrima..."  
(4.5.150)
78. "...in mortuum non fustibus, non stimulis, ac ne cauda..."  
(4.5.150)
79. "Tunc ego miseri commilitationis fortunam...me bonae frugi..."  
(4.5.150)
80. "...sic nobis otiosa...periculosus laboribus...sera refectione  
tribues? Quae...saevienti ventri..." (4.7.154)
81. "Quippe quod, licet numerosa familia...tamen quisque magis  
suae saluti...vel certe satis amplam..." (4.9.156)
82. "...Nec mora, cum noctis...quas neque sublevare neque dimovere  
ac ne..." (4.10.158)
83. "...vel opprimendi nostri vel deserendi socii..." (4.11.158)
84. "Quo sermone callido...verens scilicet ne..., non sociis suis  
sed..." (4.12.162)
85. "...non qui corporis adeo sed animi..." (4.14.166)
86. "Nec paucos fortissimi..." (4.15.166)
87. "Domine, flagrantia solis et itineris spatio...Quin potius  
domus tuae patulum..." (4.17.168)
88. "...nec inermis...sed...nec secus..." (4.19.172)
89. "Tunc ego, sensim gliscente adhuc illo tumultu, retrogradi  
fuga...sed plane...repugnantem latens pone ianuam ipse, pro-  
spicio." (4.20.172)
90. "...quamquam enim vitae metas ultimas obiret, non tamen...  
oblitus iam faucibus ipsis hiantis Cerberi reluctabat..."  
(4.20.172)
91. "...nunc fugiens, nunc resistens..." (4.20.172)
92. "...tandem immortalitate digno illo spiritu expugnato, ma-  
gis quam patientia...sed iam morsibus..." (4.21.174)
93. "...ut usque diluculum, immo et in multum diem nemo..."  
(4.21.174)
94. "...sic etiam Thrasyleon nobis perivit sed a gloria non  
perivit." (4.21.176)
95. "...et quamquam prius, cum essem Lucius, unico..., tunc ven-  
tri..." (4.22.178)
96. "...nullam quidem prorsus sarcinam vel omnino, licet vilem,  
laciniam ferentes sed...unicam virginem..." (4.23.178)
97. "Misera, tali domo, tanta familia...inque isto saxeo carcere..."  
(4.24.180)

98. "...non caedi, non rapinae manus afferunt, sed..." (4.26.182)
99. "...nec ullo de familiaribus nostris repugnante, ac ne tantillum,.. " (4.26.182)
100. "Sic ad instar Athracidis et Protesilae..." (4.26.182)
101. "Bono animo esto...nam praeter quod diurnae quietis imagines falsae perhibentur...iri praedicant..." (4.27.184)
102. "...quamvis gratissima specie...penuria poterat..." (4.28.184)
103. "...deam Venerem venerabuntur..." (4.28.186)
104. "...quam caerulum profundum...sed terras venerem aliam..." (4.28.186)
105. "Sed non adeo gaudens ista, quaecumque est, meos honores usurpaverit: iam faxo huius..." (4.30.188)
106. "...et omnium matrimonia corrumpens impune committit tanta flagitia, et nihil prorsus boni facit." (4.30.190)
107. "...per tuae sagittae dulcia vulnera, per flammae istius mellitas uredines..." (4.31.190)
108. "Spectatur ab omnibus...nec quisquam, non rex, non regius..." (4.32.192)
109. "Olim duae maiores sorores,...sed Psyche virgo..." (4.32.192)
110. "Rex, olim beatus...pigens tristisque..." (4.33.194)
111. "...et sonus tibiae zygiae mutatur in querulum Lydii modus, ..." (4.33.194)
112. "...prosequente populo vivum producitur funus et...non nuptias sed exequias..." (4.34.194)
113. "...videt fontem vitreo latice..." (5.1.200)
114. "...non humanis manibus sed divinis artibus..." (5.1.200)
115. "...sibi domus faciat licet sole nolente;..." (5.1.202)
116. "...quod nullo vinculo, nullo claustro, nullo custode totius orbis..." (5.2.202)
117. "...nec quamquam tamen illa videre poterat, sed verba..." (5.3.204)
118. "...nec sororibus quidem...ac ne videre..." (5.5.206)
119. "...nec lavacro nec cibo nec ulla denique..." (5.5.206)
120. "...et illae sedatae lacrimae postliminio redeunt prolectante gaudio..." (5.7.210)
121. "...nec tamen Psyche coniugale illud praeceptum...,sed e re nata confingit..." (5.8.210)
122. "...et ne qua sermonis procedentis...,auro facto..." (5.8.212)
123. "...Et nos quidem, quae natu...tantis opibus et deo marito potita sit,..." (5.9.212)
124. "...quae voces ancillas habet et ventis ipsis imperitat... At ego misera..." (5.9.212)

125. "...plerumque detortos et duratos in lapidem digitos eius perfricans...manus tam delicatas istas adurens..." (5.10.214)
126. "...nec uxoris officiosam faciem sed medicae..." (5.10.214)
127. "Nec sum mulier nec omnino spiro, nisi eam pessum de tantis opibus deiecero..." (5.10.214)
128. "...non parentibus nostris ac nec ulli...nec sunt enim beati quorum civitias nemo novit..." (5.10.214)
129. "...si texeris nostra secreta silentio, divinum, si profana-veris, mortalem..." (5.11.216)
130. "Dies ultima et casus extremus: et sexus infestus et sanguis inimicus iam sumpsit arma et castra commovit et aciem direxit et classicum personavit,..." (5.12.218)
131. "...in morem Sirenum scopulo prominentes funestis vocibus..." (5.12.218)
132. "...ne parentibus quidem visis, recta de navibus scopulum petunt..." (5.14.220)
133. "...Psyche, non ita ut pridem parvula, et ipsa iam mater es." (5.14.220)
134. "...Nec tamen scelestarum feminarum nequitia vel ipsa mellita cantus dulcedine mollita..." (5.15.222)
135. "Tunc adolescens modo florenti languine barbam instruens, nunc aetate media candenti canitie lucidus..." (5.16.224)
136. "Nec diu blandis alimomiarum obsequiis...sed cum primum praegnationem..." (5.18.226)
137. "Ad haec iam tua est existimatio, utrum sororibus pro tua cara salute sollicitis...an saevissimae bestia sepeliri visceribus: quod si te ruris huius vocalis solitudo..." (5.18.226)
138. "...omissis tectae machinae latibulis, destrictis gladiis fraudium simplicis..." (5.19.228)
139. "At Psyche relicta sola, nisi quod infestis furiis agitata sola non est..." (5.21.230)
140. "...simile maerendo fluctuat..." (5.21.230)
141. "Festinat, differt, audet, trepidat, diffidit, irascitur, et quod ultimum, in eodem corpore odit bestiam, diligit maritum..." (5.21.230)
142. "...et animi alioquin infirma, fati tamen saevitia subministrante viribus roboratur..." (5.22.230)
143. "...sive perfidia pessima sive invidia noxia sive quod tale corpus contingere..." (5.23.232)
144. "Nec deus amator humi iacentem deserens..." (5.24.234)
145. "...Sed illae quidem consiliatrices egregiae tuae tam perniciose magisterii..." (5.24.234)
146. "...locum vel saltem mortua pervenire..." (5.27.240)
147. "Luctum desine et pone maerorem precibusque potius Cupidinem

- deorum maximum percole..." (5.25.236)
148. "...montano scortatu tu vero marino natatu...non voluptas ulla, non gratia...sed incompta et agrestia et horrida..." (5.28.240)
149. "...ut primum quidem tuae parentis, immo dominae praecepta calcares..." (5.29.242)
150. "...nec sordidis amoribus inimicam meam cruciaries, verum... et immaturis iungeres amplexibus..." (5.29.242)
151. "Quis autem te deum, quis hominum patietur passim cupidines populis..., cum tuae domus amores amare coerceas...?" (5.31.248)
152. "...rata scilicet nullius dei fana ac caerimonias neglegere se debere sed omnium benivolam misericordiam corrogare." (6.1.250)
153. "...et inluminarum Proserpinae nuptiarum demeacula et luminosarum filiae inventionum remeacula." (6.2.252)
154. "...et per famulorum tuorum draconum pinnata curricula et glebae sicalae sulcamina et currum rapacem et terram tenacem et inluminarum...demeacula et luminosarum..." (6.2.252)
155. "Magni Iovis germana et coniuga, sive tu Sami...Lucinam appellat." (6.4.254)
156. "...'Tandem,' inquit 'Dignata es socrum tuam salutare? An potius maritum...' (6.9.260)
157. "Felix vero ego, quae in ipso aetatis meae flore vocabor avia, et vilis ancillae filius nepos Veneris audiet." (6.9.262)
158. "'Non tuum,' inquit 'Nequissima, nec tuarum manuum istud opus sed illius, cui tuo, immo...' (6.11.264)
159. "...partim ne petulant luxurie vulnus gravaret, partim ne cum sua cupita..." (6.11.264)
160. "...non obsequium quidem illa functura, sed requiem malorum praecipitio..." (6.12.266)
161. "...quamvis praesenti corpore, sensibus tamen aberat..." (6.14.270)
162. "...quodque vos deieratis per numina deorum, deos per Stygis maiestatem solere!" (6.15.270)
163. "Nec tamen nutum deae saevientis vel tunc expiare potuit: nam sic eam maiora." (6.16.272)
164. "...sed non hactenus vacua debebis per illas tenebras incedere, sed offas polentae..." (6.18.274)
165. "Ergo et inter mortuos avaritia vivit, nec Charon...,sed moriens pauper..." (6.18.274)
166. "...nec quicquam ibi rerum nec formositas ulla, sed..." (6.21.278)
167. "'Nec tu' inquit 'Filia, quicquam contristare nec prosapiae tantae tuae...Iam faxo nuptias non impares sed legitimas et iure...' (6.23.282)

168. "...nec unquam digredietur a tuo nexu Cupido sed istae vobis ..."  
(6.23.282)
169. "...nec quicquam idonei lucri exinde cepimus sed vulnera et ..."  
(6.26.284)
170. "...nulla salutis nostrae cura sed ne meae quidem necis habita, comitibus..." (6.26.286)
171. "...verum corium non asini crassum sed hirudinis tenue..."  
(6.26.286)
172. "...non tauro sed asino dependentem..." (6.27.288)
173. "'Vos,' inquit 'Superi, tandem meis supremis periculis opem facite, et tu, Fortuna durior iam saevire desiste..." (6.28.290)
174. "...ut primus vivam cremari censeret puellam, secundus bestiis obici suaderet, tertius...destinata." (6.31.294)
175. "Nec sectae collegi nec mansuetudini singulorum ac ne meae quidem modestiae congruit pati vos ultra modum delictique saevire terminum, nec feras, nec..." (6.31.294)
176. "...mortuae bestiae ipsa vivens ventrem habitabit,..."  
(6.32.296)
177. "...veteris fortunae et illius beati Lucii praeentisque aerumnae et infelicis..." (7.2.300)
178. "...ut et malus boni viri fama gloriatur et innocentissimus contra noxio rumore plectatur..." (7.2.302)
179. "Quod crimen non modo latrocinium, verum etiam parricidium ..."  
(7.3.302)
180. "...et tirocinio novae iuventutis ad pristinae manus...nam et invitos terrore compelli et volentes praemio..." (7.4.304)
181. "...nec manum validam erogandae stipi porrigeret, sed hauriendo potius..." (7.4.304)
182. "...libentius vulnera corpore excipientem quam aurum manu susipientem..." (7.5.306)
183. "...sed malae conscientiae reatum..., si quod bonum mihi videtur dissimulaveram." (7.9.312)
184. "...nec in similem fugam discursuram, non nihil etiam cum lupanari servierit..." (7.9.312)
185. "...proci iuvenis amore nuptiarumque castarum desiderio simulato, lupanaris..." (7.10.314)
186. "...cognosco non Haemum illum praedonem famosum sed Tlepole-  
mum..." (7.12.316)
187. "...adhuc vino magis quam vinculis..." (7.13.320)
188. "...me formavit non canem sed asinum..." (7.14.320)
189. "...uni domi me conclusum et otiosum...sed obtinuit alius qui meae libertati..." (7.14.320)
190. "Nec tantum sui cibi gratia me fatigare...Nec mihi misero statuta..." (7.15.322)



191. "...ut fascium molem elephanto, non asino paratam putares..." (7.17.326)
192. "...cum deberet potius gravantis ruinae fustes demere et levata paulisper...vel certe in alterum latum...,contra, lapidibus additis..." (7.17.326)
193. "...cum deberet egregius agaso manum porrige, capistro suspendere, cauda sublevare...nullum quidem defesso mihi ferebat auxilium..." (7.18.328)
194. "...nam cum me cursu proripuera fugiens acerbissimos incursus,...si dolori parcens paululum restitidissem..." (7.19.328)
195. "Certe dorso receptum auferres protinus...deserto deiecto illo conservo..." (7.27.340-2)
196. "...et quanquam ceteris omnibus id genus viris antistaret eximiisque muneribus...,morum tamen improbatus..." (8.2.346)
197. "Quidni, cum flamma saevi amoris parva quidem primo vapore...amburat homines?" (8.2.346)
198. "...et puellae, si vellet, quanquam velle non posset..." (8.3.348)
199. "...quod non posset, contentiosa perniciem, quasi posset..." (8.3.348)
200. "...quod nunc arduum factu putatur, amore per dies roborato facile videtur effectu..." (8.3.348)
201. "Nec ulla caprea nec pavens damula nec prae ceteris feris mitior cerva, sed aper..." (8.4.348)
202. "Nec coepti nefarii bonum piguit...sed percito atque plagoso..." (8.5.352)
203. "...et quas in primo maerore lacrimas non habebat, iam scilicet crescente gaudio reddere..." (8.7.354)
204. "...squalida tenebris imis abscondita iam cum luce transegerat..." (8.7.356)
205. "...Vulnera illa,...non sunt tota dentium vulnera: lancea mali Thrasylli me..." (8.8.358)
206. "...tormento inquieta quieti excussa..." (8.9.358)
207. "Nec isto sermone Thrasyllus..." (8.10.360)
208. "Non ego gladio, non ferro petam, absit ut..." (8.12.364)
209. "Faxo felicior necem inimici tui quam vitam tuam sentias..." (8.12.364)
210. "...nec mortis quiete recreaberis nec vitae voluptate laetaberis, sed..." (8.12.364)
211. "...unde nos incolae nocturna, immo vero matutina etiam prohibebant..." (8.15.368)
212. "...non laciniatim disperso sed cuneatim stipato..." (8.15.370)
213. "...sed illa pernicitas non erat alacritatis meae sed for-

midinis indicium..." (8.16.370)

214. "...alios fugientes arripere, alios stantibus inhaerere,..." (8.17.372)
215. "...caveremus clade, comminus canum an eminus lapidum..." (8.17.374)
216. "'At nos,' inquit 'Non vestrorum spoliolum cupidine latrocinamur, sed hanc...' (8.18.374)
217. "...calvum quidem sed cincinnis semicanis..." (8.24.384)
218. "'Vervecem,' inquit, 'Non asinum vides ad usus..., non mordacem, nec calcitronem quidem sed...' (8.25.384)
219. "Cadaver surdum et mutum delirumque praeconem..." (8.25.386)
220. "Sed postquam non cervam pro virgine sed asinum pro homine succidaneum videre..." (8.26.388)
221. "...prorsus quasi deum praesentia soleant homines non sui fieri meliores sed debiles effici vel aegroti..." (8.27.390)
222. "...ut quorundam hominum lactem, sic illa sanguinem concupisceret asinum..." (8.28.392)
223. "...sed ceteri non meae salutis sed simulacri..." (8.30.394)
224. "...canis adaeque venaticus latenter invaserat, laetusque praeda propere custodientes oculos evaserat..." (8.31.396)
225. "...Mihi denique id ipsum commentum, quod momentariam salutem repperisse videbatur, periculum grande..." (9.1.400)
226. "Nec dubio me lanceis illis vel venabulis..., ni respecto subiti periculi..." (9.2.402)
227. "...ac si intrepidus et more solito sumens aquis allibescerem, sanum..., contra vero si visum contactumque laticis vitarem ac perhorrescerem, pro..." (9.3.404)
228. "...siccine vacuus et otiosus insinuatis manibus... nec obito consueto labore vitae nostrae...?" (9.5.408)
229. "At ego misera pernox et per diem lanificio..." (9.5.408)
230. "Nec isto saltem tam nefario scelere..., sed mendacioso..." (9.10.414)
231. "...nec die tantum, verum perpeti etiam nocte prorsus..." (9.11.416)
232. "Nec tamen illa otii saginaeque... sed die sequenti molae..." (9.11.416)
233. "Nec tamen sagacitatis ac prudentiae... sed, quamquam frequenter..." (9.11.416)
234. "...magis inumbrati quam obtecti..." (9.12.418)
235. "...bonus alioquin vir et apprime modestus, pessimam et ante cunctas mulieres longe..." (9.14.422)
236. "Nec enim vel unum vitium nequissimae illi feminae deerat, sed..." (9.14.422)
237. "Tunc obstinato animo vehementer anxius Myrmex nec usquam

- dominam...et lanificio..." (9.17.426)
238. "...sed ardentem Philesitheri vigilantiam matronae nobilis pulchritudo latere non potuit..." (9.18.426)
239. "...nec auri tamen splendor...sed quam procul semotus..." (9.19.428)
240. "...illic fides, hic lucrum; illic cruciatus, hic voluptas..." (9.19.428)
241. "...nec saltem spatio cupido formosae pecuniae leniebatur, sed nocturnas..." (9.19.430)
242. "...nec a genuina levitate descivit mulier sed execrando metallo pudicitiam suam protinus auctorata est..." (9.19.430)
243. "...Commodum novis amplexibus amoris...et contra omnium opinionem..." (9.20.430)
244. "...non uxori, non ulli familiarium cordolio patefacto..." (9.21.432)
245. "...Hem qualis, dii boni, matrona, quam fida quamque sobria turpissimo se dedecore foedavit!" (9.23.436)
246. "...Non sum barbarus nec agresti..., nec ad exemplum..., ac ne iuris quidem..., sed plane cum..." (9.27.442)
247. "...vel rursum mitigato conciliari marito, vel si id nequiverit, certe larva vel aliquo diro numine immisso..." (9.29.444)
248. "...in suum sibi cubiculum deducit eum et adducta fore..." (9.30.446)
249. "...quae nullo quidem domus infortunium nuntiante cuncta cognorat, sed..." (9.31.448)
250. "...quippe cum meus dominus prae nimia paupertate ne..., sed frondoso..." (9.32.450)
251. "...non enim ovum, quod scimus illud, sed pinnis et..." (9.32.452)
252. "...quid prius quidve posterius, quid magis quid minus..." (9.34.454)
253. "Nec tamen ille vesanus tantillum praesentia multorum...sed illis..." (9.36.456)
254. "...nec fugientibus saltem compescunt sed eo magis..." (9.36.458)
255. "Nec tamen eorum ferociam vel conterrere vel expugnare potuerunt..." (9.37.458)
256. "...nec tamen peremptus ac prorsum exanimatus..." (9.37.458)
257. "Nec ullum verbum ac ne tacitum quidem...sed arrepto ferro..." (9.38.460-1)
258. "Nec miles ille familiarem cohibere quivit insolentiam sed indignatus silentio eius ut convicio..." (9.39.462)
259. "Nec ille ut primum humi supinatus est...sed plane..." (9.40.464)

260. "Nec oblitus ille veteris amicitiae prompte suscipit, meque ..."  
(9.40.466)
261. "...non disciplinae tunc quidem causa sed propter..."  
(10.1.472)
262. "...nec in stabulo sed in domo cuiusdam..." (10.1.472)
263. "...et a socco ad cothurnum ascendere." (10.2.474)
264. "Causa omnis et origo praesentis doloris et etiam medela ipsa et salus unica mihi tute ipse es!" (10.3.476)
265. "...non tamen negationis intempestiva..., sed cautae promissionis..." (10.4.478)
266. "...non acerba filii morte, non parricidii conscientia, non infortunio domus, non luctu..." (10.5.480)
267. "...nec ad instar barbaricae feritatis vel..." (10.6.484)
268. "Nec rota vel equuleus more Graecorum...sed offirmatus mira..."  
(10.10.490)
269. "...ut dulcissimis illis relictis cibis cenarem asperrimum faenum." (10.13.496)
270. "Sed bene, quod utrimquesecus sermone prolato iacturae remedium quaeritur, ne silentio procedens..." (10.14.498)
271. "Nec ulla cura iam damni sui habita, mirati monstruosas asini..." (10.15.500)
272. "At ego, quamquam iam bellule suffarcinatus, gratiosum...cupiens esurienter exhibitas escas appetebam..." (10.16.500)
273. "...ut quod nollem relato, quod vellem delecto capite monstrarem." (10.17.504)
274. "...quae partim contecta, partim revelata..." (10.18.506)
275. "At ubi partim terrestri, partim maritimo itinere..." (10.19.506)
276. "...non tantum Thiasi dantes honori quam mei conspectus cupientes..." (10.19.506)
277. "...non qualia in lupanari solent basiola,...sed pura atque..."  
(10.21.508)
278. "...quo didiceram reclinat facile, quippe cum nil novi nihilque difficile facturum..." (10.21.508)
279. "Vel tam lucida tamque tenera et lacte ac melle confecta membra...deformi saviari..." (10.22.510)
280. "Nec iuvenis sororis suae mortem tam miseram et a qua..., sed medullitus dolore..." (10.25.516)
281. "...quam sacram doctiores nominant, sed...sacra saluti..."  
(10.25.516-18)
282. "Nec ille tamen iuvenis diutius vitam tenuerat, sed inter..."  
(10.27.520)
283. "...nunc in orbem rotatum flexuosi, nunc in obliquam seriem connexi et in quadratum patorem cuneati..." (10.29.526)

284. "...corpus candidum quod caelo debeat, amictus caerulus quod mari remeat." (10.31.528)
285. "...nunc lasciviens reflabat, ut dimota pateret flos aetatae, nunc luxurians aspirabat, ut..." (10.31.528)
286. "...et permiscens bombis gravibus tinnitus acutos in modum tubae..." (10.31.530)
287. "...veros de caelo vel mari commodum involasse;..." (10.32.530)
288. "...et nunc mite conniventibus, nunc acre comminantibus..." (10.32.532)
289. "Postquam finitum...cum Minerva tristes et iratis similes e scaena...Venus vero gaudens et hilaris..." (10.34.534)
290. "...nunc incrementis consequenter augeri, nunc detrementis obsequenter imminui..." (11.1.538)
291. "...nec tantum pecuina et ferina, verum inanima etiam divino eius..." (11.1.538)
292. "...quae caeli luminosa culmina, maris salubria flamina inferum deplorata silentia..." (11.4.544-6)
293. "...nam hoc eodem momento quo tibi venio, simul et ibi praesens quae sunt..." (11.6.548)
294. "...absolutus pavore et gaudio ac dein sudore nimio permixtus..." (11.7.550)
295. "...quae pomifera subole fecundae quaeque earum tantum umbra contentae steriles." (11.7.550)
296. "...que procellarum sedato fragore ac turbido...splendore candebat." (11.7.552)
297. "...viri feminaeque...illae limbo tegmine crines madidos obvolutae, hi capillum derasi funditus verticem praenitentes,..." (11.10.554)
298. "...hic horrendus ille superum commeator et inferum, nunc atra nunc aurea facie sublimis...virentem quatens." (11.11.556)
299. "...non pecoris, non avis, non ferae, ac ne hominis quidem ipsius consimilem, sed sollerti..." (11.11.558)
300. "Nec tamen gaudio subitario..., sed placido ac prorsus humano..." (11.12.558)
301. "...ac dehinc cutis crassa tenuatur, ...humanum minutiem,..." (11.13.560)
302. "...Multis et variis exanclatis laboribus...ad portum quietis et aram misericordiae..." (11.15.562)
303. "...nec tibi natales ac ne dignitas quidem..., sed lubrico virentis aetatae ad serviles delapsus voluptates..." (11.15.562)
304. "Sed utcumque Fortunae caecitas, dum te pessimis periculis discruciat, ad religiosam istam beatitudinem..." (11.15.562)
305. "Tunc cuncti populi, tam religiosi quam profani..." (11.16.566)

306. "Nec tamen me sinebat animus...sed intentus in deae specimen ..." (11.17.568)
307. "Nec tamen fama volucris pigra pinnarum...,sed protinus in patria..." (11.18.568)
308. "...et pristinis aerumnis et praesentibus gaudiis,..." (11.19.570)
309. "Nec fuit nox una vel quies aliqua...,sed crebris imperiis..." (11.19.570)
310. "...quamquam festinans, differebam..." (11.19.570)
311. "...nec minus in dies mihi magis magisque..." (11.21.572)
312. "...ac neque vocatus morari nec non iussus festinare deberem ..." (11.21.574)
313. "Nam et inferum claustra et salutis tutelam..." (11.21.574)
314. "...nec impatientia corrumpebatur...,sed intentus..." (11.22.576)
315. "...sed noctis obscurae non obscuris imperiis evidenter monuit..." (11.22.576)
316. "...deos inferos et deos superos..." (11.23.580)
317. "Nec dies nec quies...tuis transcurrit beneficiis otiosum..." (11.25.582)
318. "...quin mari terraque protegas homines..." (11.25.582)
319. "Te superi colunt, observant inferi..." (11.25.584)
320. "...nec mihi vocis ubertas...nec ora mille linguaeque totidem..." (11.25.584)
321. "...fani quidem advena, religionis autem indigena..." (11.26.586)
322. "Nec moratus conveni protinus eum, sane nec ipsum..." (11.27.588)
323. "Nec levi cura sollicitus sed oppido suspensus..." (11.29.590)
324. "...non alienam quampiam personam reformatus, sed..." (11.30.594)
325. "...nec extimescerem malevolorum disseminationes, quas...Ac ne sacris suis..." (11.30.594)

#### IV. Assonance

1. "...quae vel auditu nova vel visu rudia vel certe supra captum cogitationis ardua videantur;..." (1.4.6)
2. "...quod polliceris, aequibonique facio, verum quod inchoaveram porro exordiar." (1.5.8.)

3. "...tu hic larvale simulacrum cum summo..." (1.6.10)
4. "...instabiles incursiones et reciprocas vicissitudines ignoras!" (1.6.10)
5. "...simul uname duabus laciniis meis exuo eumque..." (1.7.12)
6. "...enormem eluviem operose effrico..." (1.7.12)
7. "...lectulo refoveo, cibo satio, poculo mitigo..." (1.7.12)
8. "...ille imo..." (1.7.12)
9. "...quam humane tractare adorta cenae gratae atque gratuitae ac mox, urigine percita, cubili suo applicat." (1.7.14)
10. "...quoad mutua hortatione consone clamitarent..." (1.10.18)
11. "...aliud cogitarit, salutare laturos subsidiu..." (1.10.18)
12. "...sermones istos nostros anus illa cognoscat..." (1.11.20)
13. "...dicacitatis et instantis curiositatis..." (1.12.22)
14. "...ut grabatulus etiam succussu meo inquietus super dorsum meum..." (1.13.22)
15. "...huius corpus...contumulet humo..." (1.13.22)
16. "...iugulum sinistrum capulo tenus gladium totum ei..." (1.13.24)
17. "...ubi iste iugulatus mane paruerit?" (1.14.24)
18. "Heus, tu, ubi es?...Valvas..." (1.15.26)
19. "Valvas stabuli absolve, antelucio..." (1.15.26)
20. "...infestari vias, qui hoc noctis iter incipis?" (1.15.26)
21. "...cubiculum itaque reversus de genere tumultuario mortis mecum..." (1.16.28)
22. "...cum nullum aliud telum mortiferum Fortuna quam solum mihi grabatulum subministraret,..." (1.16.28)
23. "...spurcissimi humoris percussus..." (1.17.30)
24. "...afficto ex tempore absurdo ioco in alium..." (1.17.30)
25. "...medici fidi cibo..." (1.18.30)
26. "...aspersum atque..." (1.18.30)
27. "...somnium iugulari visus sum mihi..." (1.18.32)
28. "...humero exuo, caseum cum..." (1.18.32)
29. "...avide esitantem aspicio aliquanto intentiore macie atque..." (1.18.32)
30. "...avidus affectans..." (1.19.32)
31. "Aetoliam novo contracto matrimonio colo..." (1.19.34)
32. "...mihi et tibi et cunctis hominibus..." (1.20.34)
33. "...arrabone auri et argenti..." (1.21.36)
34. "...aurum argentumque...admittere?" (1.22.38)
35. "...illud cubiculum honestum receptaculum..." (1.23.40)

36. "...aemulaveris, qui non est aspernatus Hecales anus..." (1.23.40)
37. "...meis istis manibus educavi, quidni?" (2.3.50)
38. "...veritati similes explicuit..." (2.4.54)
39. "...mustulentus autumnus maturum..." (2.4.54)
40. "...evigila et tecum esto: habes exoptatam..." (2.6.58)
41. "...exoptatam occasionem et voto diutino potiris..." (2.6.58)
42. "...scitula et moribus ludicra et prorsus argutula est." (2.6.58)
43. "...aspextu defixus obstupui et mirabundus..." (2.7.58)
44. "...quam procul a meo foculo..." (2.7.60)
45. "...unica cura fuerit caput capillumque sedulo et publice..." (2.8.60)
46. "...nudam pulchritudinem suam..." (2.8.60)
47. "...in contrariam gratiam variat aspectum..." (2.9.62)
48. "...diutius quivi tantum cruciatum voluptatis eximiae sustinere..." (2.10.62)
49. "...deosculato 'Bono animo esto,'..." (2.10.64)
50. "...tutus ab uxoris eius aspectu..." (2.11.66)
51. "...istum igniculum..." (2.12.66)
52. "...mirum licet modicum istum igniculum et manibus humanis laboratum..." (2.12.66)
53. "...esset editurus in aetheris...et ipsum scire et..." (2.12.66)
54. "...emerendis edicit..." (2.12.68)
55. "...adulescentulus a tergo arrepsens...amplexus...artissime." (2.13.68)
56. "...ubi primum consaviatus eum iuxtim..." (2.13.68)
57. "...equidem exoptatus..." (2.13.70)
58. "...exinde...Euboea insula...enavigasti et maris et..." (2.13.70)
59. "...viduus necdum suus..." (2.14.70)
60. "...inimici...immo...incidant..." (2.14.70)
61. "...oppido formido..." (2.16.74)
62. "...argentum alibi clarum et aurum..." (2.19.76)
63. "...anus...alienam sepulturam antevortunt...His meis addidit alius..." (2.20.78)
64. "...omniumque ora et obtutus..." (2.20.78)
65. "...in cumulum stragulis et effultus in cubitum suberectusque in torum..." (2.21.80)
66. "...adire...avibus larissam accessi ac..." (2.21.80)



67. "...est exertis et..." (2.22.82)
68. "...perspicaciorem ipso Lynceo vel Argo et oculeum totum..." (2.23.84)
69. "...integer incolumes oculi, ... illibatae..." (2.24.84)
70. "...oculis et obarmatis..." (2.25.86)
71. "...oppido formido..." (2.25.86)
72. "...illam 'Quin abis' inquam 'Impurata..." (2.25.86)
73. "...accurro et admoto..." (2.26.88)
74. "...'Immo' inquam..." (2.26.88)
75. "...Huius diu manus deosculatus..." (2.28.92)
76. "...cum gemitu populum..." (2.29.94)
77. "...artibus et addictus... adultero..." (2.29.94)
78. "...noxio poculo torum..." (2.29.94)
79. "...exurgit et in exanimis..." (2.30.96)
80. "...iam iunctim..." (2.32.98)
81. "...immo ad ipsos inferos iam..." (3.2.102)
82. "...accusator acerrimus..." (3.4.106)
83. "...iubebat, incipere..." (3.4.106)
84. "...accuratissime affixa..." (3.5.106)
85. "...animis et viribus alacribus dormientes aggrediamur..." (3.5.108)
86. "...armatus fugare atque proterrere eos aggressus sum: at..." (3.5.108)
87. "...aggressus... ambabus capillo arreptum ac..." (3.6.108)
88. "...altius aspectu..." (3.7.110)
89. "...anus alia..." (3.8.110)
90. "...iustam indignationem..." (3.9.114)
91. "...illius imaginis... idoneis..." (3.9.114)
92. "...illa iugulatorum..." (3.9.114)
93. "...illico etiam ipsi... insignibus... ingressi..." (3.11.116)
94. "...appropinquantis admonet..." (3.12.118)
95. "...vitans oculos omnium et... obriorum declinans... obtectus..." (3.12.118)
96. "...omnium oculis..." (3.12.118)
97. "...interibit ipse..." (3.14.120)
98. "...Aiacis armatus..." (3.18.126)
99. "Igitur iam et ipse..." (3.19.128)
100. "...observatis opportunis." (3.20.128-30)
102. "...abiectis amiculis ac..." (3.20.130)

103. "...animi, attonitus in amentiam..." (3.22.132)
104. "...oculis obliquum..." (3.25.136)
105. "...inductum equum illum meum hospitium..." (3.26.138)
106. "...abigor quam procul ab hordeo quod apposueram..." (3.26.138)
107. "...affectus atque...angulo..." (3.27.138)
108. "...atque in alterum diem auxilio..." (3.27.138)
109. "...gestaminum modus numerum gerulorum excedit..." (3.28.140)
110. "...alacer ac laetus propius accessi..." (3.29.142)
111. "...attinere potuit adhuc insolitum alioquin..." (4.1.144)
112. "...implicitus et iam ipsam..." (4.3.146)
113. "...alvus artata...abundans..." (4.3.148)
114. "...alius asinus, divinato et antecapto..." (4.5.150)
115. "...adveniunt alii...adaeque latrones arbitrarere..." (4.8.154)
116. "...aureorum argentariorumque..." (4.8.154)
117. "...acerratim, panibus aggeratim poculis agminatim..." (4.8.154)
118. "...opibus otiose..." (4.9.158)
119. "...ostii tabulam offigit..." (4.10.158)
120. "...primarius et opibus plurimus..." (4.13.162)
121. "...adeo sed animi robore ceteris antistaret..." (4.14.166)
122. "...novo proventu quoquo modo..." (4.16.168)
123. "...procul a via remoto et abdito loco positum..." (4.18.170)
124. "...asportare...auri vel argenti..." (4.18.170)
125. "...exerceo. Et ecce...expergiti..." (4.22.176)
126. "...anui praecipiant assidens...alloquio..." (4.24.180)
127. "...alloquio...aniculae sermonibus ab inceptis fletibus avocar..." (4.24.180)
128. "...aspectus atrocitate..." (4.27.184)
129. "...assuspirans anus..." (4.27.184)
130. "...incendit animos, et impatiens indignationis..." (4.29.188)
131. "...incolumitatis ipsius Fortuna...infimi at...inveniat..." (4.31.190)
132. "...occurrentibus ob os..." (5.1.200)
133. "...obstupeseis opibus...omnia..." (5.2.202)
134. "...enim, et efflictim te, quicumque es..." (5.6.208)
135. "...et imprimens,...et ingerens..., et iungens..." (5.6.208)
136. "...enimvero ego...illapsam indignae..." (5.10.214)

137. "...ipsa iactatione immodicae..." (5.10.214)
138. "...et efflari exsibilarique..." (5.10.214)
139. "...contra sororem insontem..." (5.11.216)
140. "...animis armatae..." (5.11.216)
141. "...viri mei vidi faciem..." (5.19.226)
142. "...alios antependulos, alios..." (5.22.232)
143. "...ambabus arrepto..." (5.24.234)
144. "...addici iusserat, ipse potius amator advolavi tibi..." (5.24.234)
145. "...mutuis amplexibus alternae..." (5.26.238)
146. "...ipsum illum deae Veneris filium, ipsum inquam..." (5.26.238)
147. "...pari modo soror morabatur..." (5.27.240)
148. "...dolens in ipso thalamo matris iacens ingemebat..." (5.28.240)
149. "...avis peralba illa gavia..." (5.28.240)
150. "...sed enormis eluvies et squalentium foederum insuave fastidium..." (5.28.240)
151. "...habet amicam aliquam! Prome agedum..." (5.28.242)
152. "...omisit obsequium: nam per omnium oro populorum..." (6.8.258)
153. "...incidisti et inter Orci cancros iam ipsos haesisti..." (6.8.260)
154. "...inconditae illi et inextricabili moli, sed immanitate ..." (6.10.262)
155. "...impaenitendo diligenter instructa illa..." (6.13.264-6)
156. "...et atra atria Proserpinae..." (6.19.276)
157. "...amoribus ancillae Milonis animum..." (7.1.300)
158. "...multas mulas alumnas..." (7.14.322)
159. "...et pondere levatus et exitio liberatus evado..." (7.20.330)
160. "...illis inhians illicitas atque incognitas..." (7.21.330)
161. "...eiulans et exinde..." (7.27.340)
162. "Is de eius exitio et domus..." (8.1.344)
163. "...genis hoc illac iactatis consectas interficet..." (8.4.350)
164. "...non audiet aliud, amens..." (8.6.352)
165. "...ardentibus animis alios fugientes arripere, alios..." (8.17.372)
166. "...stantibus inhaerere, quosdam iacentes inscendere..." (8.17.372)

167. "...cientes illum iuvenem frequenter inclamant..." (8.21.378)
168. "...prorsus hunc illum nec aliu locoru inquilinu prae-  
minabatur..." (8.21.378)
169. "...equi atque alii asini..." (8.23.382)
170. "...atque ibi pleraque iumenta incurrisse..." (9.2.402)
171. "...respecto subiti periculi turbine cubiculu..." (9.2.402)
172. "...Propter unicu caliculu quem deu..." (9.10.414)
173. "...saeva, scaeva, vivosa, ebriosa, pervicax, pertinax..."  
(9.14.422)
174. "...insistens, iubebat, incoram..." (9.15.422)
175. "...animi amatore illum alacrem vadimoniu sistam..."  
(9.22.434)
176. "...assuetos abiecta per agros essitare cadavera..." (9.36.  
456)
177. "...ad divitem atque ardentibus animis..." (9.37.458)
178. "...quasi vera asseverare atque asserere..." (10.7.486)
179. "...de innocente isto iuvene suppliciu vos..." (10.11.492)
180. "...Nam et ego tandem ex aliqua parte..." (10.16.500)
181. "...ei facere cupiens esurienter exhibitas escas appetebam..."  
(10.16.500)
182. "...et asinu pinnis agglutinatis adambulante..." (11.8.  
552)
183. "...immo inter ipsos decurionu..." (11.30.594)

## V. Classical and Historical Allusions

1. "...a Plutarcho illo inclito ac mox Sexto..." (1.2.4)
2. "...ut illa Medea unius dieculae a Creone impetratis..."  
(1.10.18)
3. "'Hic est, soror Panthia, carus Endymion, hic Catamitu meus  
...At ego scilicet Ulixi astu deserta vice Calypsonis..."  
(1.12.22)
4. "...canem Cerberu prorsus esurientem mei..." (1.15.26)
5. "...in Dianam factus tenet libratam..." (2.4.52)
6. "...Venus ipsa fuerit, licet omni Gratianu choro stipata et  
toto Cupidinu populo comitata et balteo suo cincta, ...nec  
Vulcano suo." (2.8.62)
7. "'Ecce' inquam 'Veneris hortator et armiger Liber advenit  
ultro...navigiu Veneris indiget sola,..." (2.11.64-6)

8. "...Istam lucernam Sibyllam pascimus,..." (2.11.66)
9. "...immo vero Ulixeam peregrinationem incidant." (2.14.70)
10. "...prorsus gladiatoriae Veneris antecenia." (2.15.72)
11. "...ubi primam sagittam saevi Cupidinis in ima..." (2.16.74)
12. "...in speciem Veneris quae marinos fluctus subit pulchre reformata,..." (2.17.74)
13. "...pendulae Veneris fructu..." (2.17.74)
14. "...a malis Harpyiis probe custodias.'" (2.23.82)
15. "...certe perspicaciorem ipso Lynceo vel Argo et oculeum totum." (2.23.84)
16. "...ut ne deus quidem Delphicus ipse facile discerneret,..." (2.25.86)
17. "Sic in modum superbi iuvenis Adonei vel musae vatis Pim-pleidos..." (2.26.88)
18. "'Quid, oro, me post Lethaea pocula iam Stygiis paludibus innatantem..." (2.29.92)
19. "...An non putas devotionibus meis posse Diras invocari,..." (2.29.94)
20. "...in vicem Geryoneae caedis fatigatum,..." (2.32.98)
21. "...Quamquam enim iam in peculio Proserpinae et Orci familia numeratus,..." (3.9.114)
22. "...in insani modum Aiacis armatus,..." (3.18.126)
23. "...ad exemplum duodeni laboris Herculei numerare, vel trigemino corpori Geryonis vel triplici formae Cerberi,..." (3.19.128)
24. "...ut meae Veneri Cupido pinnatus assistam tibi..." (3.22.132)
25. "...et supremi Iovis certus nuntius vel laetus armiger,..." (3.23.132)
26. "...sed pro Iupiter hospitalis et Fidei secreta numina!" (3.26.138)
27. "...in ipso fere meditullio Eponae deae simulacrum residens aediculae,..." (3.27.138)
28. "Sed tandem mihi inopinatam salutem Iupiter ille tribuit:..." (3.29.142)
29. "...non usquequaque ferina praecordia Veneris et Gratianum lucum illum arbitra." (4.2.146)
30. "...ac iam cetera semiferis Lapithis evantibus Centaurisque similia." (4.8.154)
31. "...per dexteram Martis,..." (4.11.160)
32. "...iam faucibus ipsis hiantis Cerberi reluctabat:..." (4.20.172)

33. "...dehinc canticis quibusdam Marti deo blanditi paululum conquiescunt." (4.22.176)
34. "...taedis lucida constrepebat hymenaeum." (4.26.182)
35. "Sic ad instar Athracidis et Protesilai dispectae..." (4.26.184)
36. "...ut ipsam prorsus deam Venerem venerabantur...sed terras Venerem aliam,..." (4.28.186)
37. "...ad conspectum deae Veneris navigbant...et epulis Veneris obsentis nomen propitiatur,..." (4.29.186-8)
38. "Frustra me pastor (Paris) ille, cuius iustitiam fidemque magnus comprobavit Iupiter,..." (4.30.188)
39. "Adsunt Nerei filiae chorum canentes, et Portunus caerulis barbis hispidus, et gravis piscoso sinu Salacia, et auriga parvulus delphini Palaemon; iam passim maria persultantes Tritonum catervae;..." (4.31.192)
40. "Sed Apollo, quamquam Graecus et Ionicus,..." (4.32.192-4)
41. "Quod tremit ipse Iovis,..." (4.33.194)
42. "...mitis aura molliter spirantis Zephyri,..." (4.35.198)
43. "...non tauro sed asino dependentem Dircen aniculam,..." (6.27.288)
44. "...et Phrixum arieti supernatassee et Arionem delphinum gubernasse et Europam tauro supercubasse. Quod si vere Iupiter..." (6.29.292)
45. "At paulo ante pinnatam Pegasi vincebas celeritatem." (6.30.294)
46. "Fortissimo deo Marti clientes, mihique..." (7.5.306)
47. "Supplicatum Marti comiti pergimus et...virenti Marti deo faciunt." (7.10.314)
48. "...nec hospitalis Iovis servato foedere..." (7.16.324)
49. "...quas ad habitum dei Liberi formaverat,..." (8.7.356)
50. "Ultronea vobis, infesti Manes..." (8.14.368)
51. "Pegasum inclutum illum...scilicet igniferae morsum Chimaerae." (8.16.370-2)
52. "...et omniparens dea Syria et sanctus Sabadius, et Bellona et Mater Idaea, et cum suo Adone Venus..." (8.25.386)
53. "Nec immerito priscae poeticae divinus auctor..." (Homer) (9.13.420)
54. "Iuro per istam ego sanctam Cererem,..." (9.23.436)
55. "...quod flagellum Furiae,..." (9.36.456)
56. "...quamdiu primis elementis Cupido parvulus nutriebatur..." (10.2.474)
57. "...cuius tamen docto Veneriae cupidinis comprehensio,..." (10.2.474)
58. "...et exemplo legis Atticae Martique..." (10.7.484)

59. "...ut olim Haryiac fuere, quae diripiebant Phineias dapes." (10.15.498)
60. "...ad instar asinariae Pasiphaae complexus meos..." (10.19.508)
61. "...nec Minotauri matrem frustra delectatam putarem..." (10.22.510)
62. "...subditur alia Proserpinae sacra saluti..." (10.25.518)
63. "...quem vates Homerus Idaeum cecinit,..." (10.30.526)
64. "...et in modum Paridis Phrygii pastoris barbaricis amiculis humeris defluentibus...et virgula Mercurium indicabant... mandaret Iuppiter nutu significans,...in deae Iuonis speciem similis;...alia quam putares Minervam,..." (10.30.526-8)
65. "...gratia coloris ambrosei designans Venerem,...Iunonem quidem Castor et Pollux..." (10.31.528)
66. "...et lacteos puellios dices tu Cupidines veros...hinc Gratiae gratissimae, inde Horae pulcherrimae,..." (10.32.530)
67. "...et originalem sententiam magni Iovis consiliis electus..." (10.33.532)
68. "...Palamedes proditiōis damnatur,...praefertur Ulixes modicus Aiaci maximo...Nonne divinae prudentiae senex (Socrates) ...cunctis mortalibus deus Delphicus,..." (10.33.)
69. "...ille Pythagoras prodidit,..." (11.1.538)
70. "...sive tu Ceres alma frugum...nunc Eleusiniam glebam percolis; seu tu caelestis Venus,...seu Phoebi soror,...seu nocturnis ululatibus horrenda Proserpina..." (11.2.540)
71. "Inde primigenii Phryges Pessinuntiam deum Matrem, hinc... Cecropeiam Minervam,...Paphiam Venerem,...Dictynnam Dianam, ...Stygiam Proserpinam,...vetustam deam Cererem, Iunonem alii, Bellonam alii, Hecatam isti, Rhamnusiam illi...reginam Isidem." (11.5.546)
72. "...Acherontis tenebris interlucentem Stygiisque..." (11.6.550)
73. "...Phrygiis Catamiti pastoris...ut illum quidem Bellerophonem, hunc autem dices Pegasus,..." (11.8.552)
74. "...quod Camenarum favore sollers,..." (11.9.554)
75. "...necnon Mercuriale etiam caduceum..." (11.10.556)
76. "...attollens canis cervices arduas Anubis,..." (11.11.556)
77. "...calcas Tartarum." (11.25.584)
78. "...invicti Osiris, necdum sacris illustratum." (11.27.586)

## VI. Consonance

1. "...pronus, affectat, ...paululum processerant,..." (1.2.4)

2. "...qui velim scire vel cuncta vel certe..." (1.2.4-5)
3. "...factu facilia..." (1.4.6)
4. "...infesto devorasse ac mox eundem invitamento exiguae stipis venatoriam lanceam, qua parte minatur exitium..." (1.4.8)
5. "...aderamus, admiratione." (1.4.8)
6. "...commodum vespera...ecce Socraten contubernalem meum conspicio." (1.6.10)
7. "...tuis tutores..." (1.6.10)
8. "...peregrinationis diuturnae et domuitionis anxiae et spoliationis diuturnae..." (1.7.12)
9. "...congressu annosam ac pestilentem luem contraho et ipsas etiam lacinias, quas boni latrones contegendo mihi concesserant...in eam contuli,..." (1.7.14)
10. "...scortum scorteum..." (1.8.14)
11. "...lucernam lucidam..." (1.12.22)
12. "...hic Catamitus meus...hic, qui...meam,hic; qui meis..." (1.12.22)
13. "...destinatis virilia desecamus?" (1.13.22)
14. "...resurgunt;...resident, postes ad repagula redeunt, ad claustra pessuli recurrunt." (1.14.24)
15. "...denuo derivo et iniecta dextra..." (1.17.30)
16. "Explere latice fontis lacteo." (1.19.32)
17. "...fabula fabulosius..." (1.20.34)
18. "...ut habitus et habitudo..." (1.20.34)
19. "...infimae infamas..." (1.21.36)
20. "...nec fumi nec nidoris nebulam vererer." (1.22.36)
21. "...fortiter fores..." (1.22.38)
22. "...incipientem invenio..." (1.22.38)
23. "...promptuario oleum unctui...profer ociter...produc ad proximas balneas...prolixo..." (1.24.40)
24. "...consternatus...condiscipuli valido consilio..." (1.25.44)
25. "...inflexum hic intextum..." (2.2.50)
26. "...Sanctissimae Salviae..." (2.2.50)
27. "...dignitas discernit..." (2.3.52)
28. "...veste reflatum...vegetum...venerabile..." (2.4.52)
29. "...pectus arduis pedes..." (2.4.54)
30. "...sermone secreto..." (2.5.54)
31. "...retrorsa respiciens..." (2.6.58)
32. "...cibarium vasculum floridis...in circulum et in..." (2.7.58)
33. "...caput capillo..." (2.8.60)
34. "...vegetus fulgurat vel..." (2.9.62)



35. "...capillis color gratus et nitor splendidus...et contra  
...in contrariam...coruscans...corvina...columbarum collis  
...coactus..." (2.9.62)
36. "...oculis occurens..." (2.9.62)
37. "...mundo exornata mulier..." (2.9.62)
38. "...sed in ordinatus ornatus..." (2.9.62)
39. "...cacumen capillus..." (2.10.64)
40. "...complexus coepi..." (2.10.64)
41. "...voluntate...voluptas..." (2.10.64)
42. "...mittit mihi..." (2.11.64)
43. "...ceterum lavacro ac dein cenae..." (2.11.66)
44. "...ac dein cenae dedimus..." (2.11.66)
45. "...respiciens...recreabar..." (2.11.66)
46. "...ego subiciens, 'Sunt'..." (2.12.66)
47. "...nam et navis..." (2.14.70)
48. "...detrusa praeceps demersa..." (2.14.70)
49. "...denique devorato..." (2.15.72)
50. "...raptim remotis...renudata...pulchre reformata..." (2.17.74)
51. "...colluctationibus ad confinia..." (2.17.74)
52. "...incitantes et voluptatem integrantes..." (2.17.74)
53. "...quae quanquam invita quod a..." (2.18.76)
54. "...comiter amatoriae...commeatum..." (2.18.76)
55. "...et cadaverum...et cantatrices..." (2.20.78)
56. "...cumulum...cubitus..." (2.21.80)
57. "...porrigens et infesto pollice..." (2.21.80)
58. "...cum...cuperem, peragrata cuncta..." (2.21.80)
59. "...conquiro, conspicor..." (2.21.80)
60. "...obliquanda quidem, quippe...quodvis..." (2.22.82)
61. "...tamen huius tam..." (2.22.82)
62. "...quam quaterni..." (2.22.82)
63. "...quod...si qui...quicquid..." (2.22.82)
64. "...decerptum deminutumque fuerit,...sua desecto..." (2.22.82)
65. "...quampiam...per quandam...quoddam..." (2.23.84)
66. "...corollarium...compara..." (2.23.84)
67. "...lucem luci..." (2.24.86)
68. "...custode cubiculo..." (2.24.86)
69. "...contra me constitit..." (2.25.86)
70. "...inanimis et indigens..." (2.25.86)
71. "...calcibus insultare, capillos distrahere..." (2.26.88)

72. "...distrahere, vestem discindere..." (2.26.88)
73. "...sermonis mei sero..." (2.27.88)
74. "...cuncta curiosis..." (2.29.92)
75. "...ac me in meam..." (2.29.94)
76. "...Sed hanc...sequens adolescentis sermo..." (2.30.94)
77. "...debilis...deiectis...dedecus...decenter..." (2.30.96)
78. "...connexis sic grabatum cossim..." (3.1.100)
79. "...ministris et turbae miscellaneae...magistratum immissa manu..." (3.2.100)
80. "...insistimus...insequitur,...incederem..." (3.2.102)
81. "...circumforaneis...circumductus..." (3.2.102)
82. "...sublimo suggestu..." (3.2.102)
83. "...meo merito..." (3.4.106)
84. "...retro reflexum..." (3.6.108)
85. "...temperato tertiumque..." (3.6.108)
86. "...pectore offenso peremo." (3.6.108)
87. "...cuius cupidine..." (3.6.110)
88. "...pannis...paribusque..." (3.8.110)
89. "...quatientes, quae circumfusae lectulum, quo..." (3.8.110-12)
90. "...viduitati ac solitudini de vindicta solacium date."  
(3.8.112)
91. "...ac solitudini de vindicta solacium date." (3.8.112)
92. "...quidem, quod...qui..." (3.8.112)
93. "...suum super..." (3.9.114)
94. "...quae...quod...quae...quamquam..." (3.9.114)
95. "...indignationem iniuriae, quae inhaeserat..." (3.10.116)
96. "...angorem animi..." (3.11.116)
97. "...discedit nec me digredi...differamus." (3.12.118)
98. "...producit ad lavacrum proximum..." (3.12.118)
99. "...denique manibus denotatus..." (3.12.118)
100. "...supplicium sume..." (3.13.120)
101. "...consecuta in meum convertit..." (3.14.120)
102. "...quidem ipsi,...quod tu quicquam..." (3.14.120)
103. "...adversus...addicere..." (3.14.120)
104. "...praesumo, qui praeter...praeter..." (3.15.122)
105. "...pectoris tui penetralibus..." (3.15.122)
106. "...quod quidem..." (3.15.122)
107. "...decorum efflictim deperit..." (3.16.124)

108. "...magiae maturius..." (3.16.124)
109. "...invenit...inclementer increpat..." (3.16.124)
110. "...reputans...repulsa...commoveri..." (3.16.124)
111. "...commoveri...consuevit...consilium...tui contemplatione..." (3.16.124)
112. "...deceptus caligine...destricto..." (3.18.126)
113. "...promoveret, nocte proxima..." (3.21.130)
114. "...decantatus...defixus...defrictis..." (3.22.132)
115. "...depromit...deosculatus...deprecatus..." (3.24.134)
116. "...concesseram...collegarum...cogito..." (3.27.138)
117. "...meorum mecum..." (3.27.138)
118. "...nimiae nimio..." (3.28.140)
119. "...passim...pastui..." (4.1.144)
120. "...compascuus coetus..." (4.1.144)
121. "...miseratione mihi..." (4.3.148)
122. "...procul dubio iam morti proximus..." (4.3.148)
123. "...commilitonis fortunam cogitans..." (4.5.150)
124. "...sensuque fuerim asinus sedulo sentiatis..." (4.6.152)
125. "...casula cannulis..." (4.6.152)
126. "...deminuti debilem..." (4.8.156)
127. "...salutem merito sarcinis..." (4.8.156)
128. "...Quippe quod..." (4.9.156)
129. "Nec...neque...neque...ne...ne..." (4.10.158)
130. "...virtutibus suis vitae..." (4.12.160)
131. "...paupertinas pannosasque..." (4.12.160)
132. "...invalido...inopinato...inegit..." (4.12.162)
133. "...sepulturae...secutorem..." (4.12.162)
134. "...nullum redivere numerum..." (4.14.164)
135. "...saetae circumfluentis densitate saepimus..." (4.15.166)
136. "...foraminibus, fortissimum..." (4.15.166)
137. "...perterritus numerumque perditorum..." (4.17.168)
138. "...receptacula reseramus et, ex disciplina..." (4.18.170)
139. "...sectae servato..." (4.18.170)
140. "...repandit...receptis...recondi...recurrentes...resistentem redirent..." (4.18.170)
141. "...quantam quisque..." (4.18.170)
142. "...destrictis denique..." (4.19.172)
143. "...comprimendam bestiam cohortantur..." (4.19.172)
144. "...retrogradi...repugnantem,...reluctabat,...retinens,..."

(4.20.172)

145. "...quamvis...quaerere potuit, quippe...qui..." (4.20.174)
146. "...quippe quidam..." (4.21.174)
147. "...profuerunt...procurrens,...procerus...proximo...prodidit..." (4.21.174)
148. "Confestim itaque constrictis..." (4.21.176)
149. "...imminens impedire..." (4.22.178)
150. "...viribus unicam virginem..." (4.23.178)
151. "...cumulo, quamquam satis cupidi..." (4.23.178)
152. "...tali domo, tanta familia, tam caris vernulis, tam sanctis..." (4.24.180)
153. "...innata atque innutrita sum, privata, sub incerto..." (4.24.180)
154. "...at commodum conniverat..." (4.25.180)
155. "...infestis...incipit, et aniculae quamquam instantissime causas novi et instaurati..." (4.25.180)
156. "...defraudere iuvenes meos destinas..." (4.25.182)
157. "...dispectae disturbataeque..." (4.26.182)
158. "...coronis floridum consequi..." (4.27.184)
159. "...prosperumque proventum..." (4.27.184)
160. "...admiratione stupidi et admoventes..." (4.28.186)
161. "...Venerem venerabantur..." (4.28.186)
162. "...conversari populi coetibus..." (4.28.186)
163. "...procedit...proximas et terrae plusculum provinciasque..." (4.29.186)
164. "...verae Veneris vehementer..." (4.29.188)
165. "...corrumpens impune committit..." (4.30.190)
166. "...virgo vidua..." (4.32.192)
167. "...perciti nefarium facinus perficere..." (4.34.196)
168. "...praeclara praemia..." (4.34.196)
169. "...festino felices istas nuptias obire, festino..." (4.34.196)
170. "...recubans...recreata...resurgit..." (5.1.200)
171. "...videt lucum...videt fontem vitreo..." (5.1.200)
172. "...medio luci meditullio..." (5.1.200)
173. "...pretio pretiosae..." (5.1.202)
174. "...congesta gasis conspicit..." (5.2.202)
175. "Prohinc cubiculo te refer, et lectulo lassitudinem refove..." (5.2.202)
176. "...consuetudinem delectationem ei commendarat..." (5.4.204)
177. "...sonus vocis incertae solitudinis erat solacium..." (5.4.204)

178. "...dilapso diem..." (5.5.206)
179. "...conversationis colloquio..." (5.5.206)
180. "...refectione recreata..." (5.5.206)
181. "...maturius lectum maritus..." (5.6.206)
182. "...perdia et pernox..." (5.6.206)
183. "...precedentis labe consilium tacitum proderetur..." (5.8.212)
184. "...extorres et Lare...exulantes..." (5.9.212)
185. "...patria degamus longe parentum..." (5.9.212)
186. "...quanta in domo iacent et qualia monilia, quae praenitent vestes, quae splendant gemmae, quantum...quon..." (5.9.212)
187. "...iam iam..." (5.9.212)
188. "...suum prodiderit animum, deque...proiecent, propelli..." (5.10.214)
189. "...contumelia, consilium..." (5.10.214)
190. "...ipsae vidimus quae vidisse..." (5.10.214)
191. "...mox comminus congregietur...conatibus nefarias insidias tibi comparant..." (5.11.216)
192. "...non videbis si videris..." (5.11.216)
193. "...venerint venient..." (5.11.216)
194. "...teneras et teretes..." (5.13.220)
195. "...suum de provincia proxima..." (5.15.222)
196. "...onustas ventoso vehiculo reddidit..." (5.15.222)
197. "...candenti canitie lucidus..." (5.16.224)
198. "...deo profecto denupsit et deum nobis..." (5.16.224)
199. "...viri mei vidi..." (5.19.226)
200. "...salutem diu diuque..." (5.20.228)
201. "...cubare consuesti latenter absconde lucernamque concinnem completam oleo..." (5.20.228)
202. "...nisu quam valido noxii serpentis nodum cervicis..." (5.20.228)
203. "...nuptiis hominem te iungemus homini..." (5.20.228)
204. "...nox aderat et maritus aderat priusque Veneris proeliis velitatus..." (5.21.230)
205. "...Cupidinem formosum deum formose cubantem, cuius..." (5.22.230)
206. "...deterrita et...defecta tremensque desedit...delapsum..." (5.22.230)
207. "...lumen lucernae..." (5.22.232)
208. "...sponte in Amoris incidit amorem..." (5.23.232)
209. "Tunc magis magisque cupidine flagrans Cupidinis..." (5.23.232)

210. "...de somni mensura metuebat..." (5.23.232)
211. "...tanto percita saucia mente fluctuat,...perfidia pessima..." (5.23.232)
212. "...corpus contingere..." (5.23.232)
213. "...summa luminis sui stillam ferventis olei super..." (5.23.232)
214. "...comitatus extrema consequia..." (5.24.234)
215. "...sese propere ad Oceani profundum gremium..." (5.28.240)
216. "...puerum ingenuum et investem sollicitavit..." (5.28.242)
217. "...Domina; puto puellam..." (5.28.242)
218. "...famosa fabula et non dicendi filii mei facta..." (5.31.246)
219. "...amores amare..." (5.31.248)
220. "...dividit et discretim..." (6.1.250)
221. "...terram tenacem..." (6.2.252)
222. "...supplicis tuae, subsiste..." (6.2.252)
223. "...subsitae convallis sublucidum..." (6.3.252-4)
224. "...cogitationes consuluit..." (6.5.256)
225. "...subeunt susceptaque domina laetae subvolant..." (6.6.258)
226. "...praeconio praemium..." (6.6.258)
227. "...digerunt acervum separatimque distributis dissitisque..." (6.10.264)
228. "...superciliis surridens amarum..." (6.13.268)
229. "...vos deieratis per numina deorum, deos per Stygis..." (6.15.270)
230. "...aegrotum consumpsit atque contrivit..." (6.16.272)
231. "...delitam theatrum deorum..." (6.16.272)
232. "...sese compelli manifeste comperit; quidni, quae suis..." (6.17.272)
233. "...Manesque commeare cogeretur..." (6.17.272)
234. "...praealtam indidem sese datura praecipitem; sic enim..." (6.17.272)
235. "...enim rebatur ad inferas recta..." (6.17.272)
236. "...offrenatum unius offulae..." (6.19.276)
237. "...praeda facile praeteribis,..." (6.19.276)
238. "...ad ipsamque protinus Proserpinam..." (6.19.276)
239. "...suadeat sumere..." (6.19.276)
240. "...humi reside et...remeans canis saevitiam offula reliqua redime, ac...reservaveras stipe...,recolens...redies..." (6.19.276)
241. "...residuaque navitae reddita stipe,...recurrat. Et repetita ..." (6.20.278)

242. "...contionem protinus convocare ac si qui coetu..." (6.23.280)
243. "...relictis et plagas recurantibus, ipsi ad reliquas..." (6.25.284)
244. "...remanserant, dudum recurrunt reliqua laturi..." (6.26.286)
245. "...detractam protinus cum suo sibi funiculo devinctam dedere..." (6.30.294)
246. "...me cum meo famulo meoque vestore illo equo factum conservum atque coniugem." (7.3.302)
247. "...virum magnanimae vivacitatis volentem volentes..." (7.5.306)
248. "...totum corporis pondus in postremos poplites recello..." (7.24.334)
249. "...magnopere commovebar, quippe consuetus ex forma concidi fustibus..." (7.25.336)
250. "...congruens pessimis conatibus contra noxium conscientiam..." (7.27.340)
251. "...firmiter deorsus delapsum nutriens amorem et denegati..." (8.2.346)
252. "...signo sibi..." (8.4.348)
253. "...repentino reddito..." (8.4.348)
254. "Sed Thrasyllus nimum nimius..." (8.7.354)
255. "...famulitio conservam coniugam..." (8.22.380)
256. "...sui contumeliam vindicasse contenta, iam contra sua..." (8.22.380)
257. "...quoque detestabili deserta..." (8.23.380)
258. "...desinit...denique de..." (8.24.384)
259. "...sed nimirum nihil Fortuna..." (9.1.400)
260. "...illis vel venabulis, immo vero et..." (9.2.402)
261. "...suae periculo pestilentiae letalis pervicaci..." (9.2.402)
262. "...nostram saltem lucerna luceat." (9.5.408)
263. "...sectae commutatione risum toto coetu commoveram..." (9.11.418)
264. "...ipse gratas gratias asino..." (9.13.420)
265. "...meo memini..." (9.13.420)
266. "...pervicax, pertinax..." (9.14.422)
267. "...pessimum pessime perduint..." (9.21.434)
268. "...anus adhaerens lateri temerarius adulter adventat..." (9.22.436)
269. "...in proximum deportat angiportum..." (9.25.440)
270. "Et tamen taciti vulneris et suae sordidae conscientiae..." (9.26.440)
271. "...conscientiae commonita..." (9.26.440)

272. "...carpebantur praecordia et praecedens facinus et praesentem ..." (9.26.440)
273. "...feminae constantiam cogitanti..." (9.26.440)
274. "...capitis tam venustum tamque pulchellum puellum..." (9.27.442)
275. "...et praeter praemii destinatum..." (9.29.446)
276. "...compendium contemptione etiam..." (9.29.446)
277. "...qui matrem suam coepit continuo comitari..." (9.33.452)
278. "...et cuncta facile faciens..." (9.35.454)
279. "...hortulanum contendit; contra commilitones..." (9.41.468)
280. "...defunctorum liberorum matres sceleratas hereditates excipere..." (10.28.522)
281. "...mihi coronam et Hercule coronam consequenter..." (11.12.558)
282. "...tuo nutu spirant flamina, nutriunt nubila..." (11.25.584)
283. "...non obumbrato vel obtecto calvitio sed quoquo versus obvio, gaudens obibam..." (11.30.594)

## VII. Isocola

1. "...caelum deponere, terram suspendere,...montes diluere, manes sublimare, deos infimare,..." (1.8.14)
2. "...non claustra perfringi, non fores evelli..." (1.10.18)
3. "...et pater meus et frater meus..." (1.17.30)
4. "...tam alta, tam recens..." (1.18.30)
5. "...inenormis proceritas, succulenta gracilitas..." (2.2.50)
6. "...aures rigent, nares hiant..." (2.4.52)
7. "...muscis et herbis et foliis et virgulis..." (2.4.54)
8. "...primi nominis et omnis carminis..." (2.5.56)
9. "...cinnama fragrans et balsama rorans..." (2.8.62)
10. "...vel ignotorum miseratione vel amicorum benivolentia..." (2.14.70)
11. "...et libidinem incitantes et voluptatem integrantes:..." (2.14.70)
12. "...Mihi narras et nugas meras." (2.23.84)
13. "...et nox provecta et nox altior..." (2.25.86)
14. "...calcibus insultare, capillos distrahere..." (2.26.88)
15. "...iam tumore pectus extolli, iam salubris vena pulsari, iam spiritu corpus impleri..." (2.29.92)
16. "...iniecta manu nasum prehendo, sequitur; aures pertracto, deruunt." (2.30.96)



17. "Unus denique et manu promptior..." (3.5.106)
18. "...nec qui laverim, qui terserim..." (3.12.118)
19. "...turbantur sidera, coguntur numina..." (3.15.122)
20. "...nunc lacte vaccino, nunc melle montano..." (3.18.126)
21. "...et sentiunt et audiunt et ambulant..." (3.18.126)
22. "...micantibus oculis et rubentibus bucculis...et hiantibus osculis et fragrantibus papillis..." (3.19.128)
23. "...nec ullae plumulae nec usquam pinnulae..." (3.24.134)
24. "...neque sublevare, neque dimovere..." (4.10.158)
25. "...lucos consitos et specus roridos..." (4.17.168)
26. "...nunc fugiens, nunc resistens..." (4.20.172)
27. "...obnixo mugitu et ferino fremitu..." (4.21.174)
28. "...et animi dolore et faucium tundore..." (4.24.180)
29. "...Paphon nemo, Cnidon nemo..." (4.29.186)
30. "...pulvinaria proterunter, caerimoniae negleguntur..." (4.29.188)
31. "Spectatur ab omnibus, laudatur ab omnibus..." (4.32.192)
32. "...iam sentio, iam video..." (4.34.196)
33. "...et manibus et auribus..." (5.5.206)
34. "...luctus mulceat, ora conferat..." (5.6.208)
35. "...ibique difflebant oculos et plangebant ubera..." (5.7.208)
36. "Dies ultima et casus extremus..." (5.12.218)
37. "...alios antependulos, alios retropendulos..." (5.22.232)
38. "...sive perfidia pessima sive invidia noxia..." (5.23.232)
39. "...et quasi basiare et ipsa gestiebat..." (5.23.232)
40. "...illa de Nympharum populo seu de Horarum numero..." (5.28.242)
41. "...istas pinnas et flammās et arcum..." (5.29.244)
42. "...pharetram explicet et sagittas dearmet, arcum enodet, tandem deflammet..." (5.30.244)
43. "...et currum rapacem et terram tenacem..." (6.2.252)
44. "...in ignes, in feras, in aves, et..." (6.22.280)
45. "...nec feras nec cruces nec ignes..." (6.31.294)
46. "...verrit, sternit, coquit,..." (7.11.316)
47. "...parentes, affines, clientes, alumni, famuli..." (7.13.318)
48. "...dentibus attritu sonaci spumeus, oculis aspectu minaci flammeus..." (8.4.350)
49. "Nec ulla caprea nec pavens damula..." (8.4.348)
50. "Illum amicum, coaetaneum, contubernalem..." (8.7.354)
51. "...Chariten non tenebis, nuptias non frueris..." (8.12.364)

52. "...quas praedas inhiatis? Quae damna vindicatis?" (8.18.374)
53. "...nec consilio prudenti vel remedio sagaci..." (9.1.400)
54. "...rabie possessus ac peresus absumerer..." (9.2.402)
55. "...frontes litterati et capillum semirasi et pedes annulati..." (9.12.418)
56. "...saeva, scaeva, virosa, ebriosa, pervicax, pertinax." (9.14.422)
57. "...iam pulsat, iam clamat, iam saxo..." (9.20.430)
58. "...de adulterio, de maleficio..." (9.31.448)
59. "...quid magis quid minus..." (9.34.454)
60. "...qua cubitis, qua morsibus..." (9.40.464)
61. "...lassa genua, quies turbida et suspiritus..." (10.2.474)
62. "...petit, uxori patris matrisque fratris..." (10.3.476)
63. "...quod si vere peremptus est, si morte praeventus est..." (10.11.492)
64. "...ille porcorum, pullorum, piscium et..." (10.13.496)
65. "...asinum luctantem, asinum saltantem..." (10.17.504)
66. "...simul et convivam et vectorem..." (10.18.506)
67. "...et nunc mite conniventibus, nunc acre comminantibus..." (10.32.532)
68. "...vel artificio docta vel abstinencia frugi..." (10.34.536)
69. "...nunc incrementis consequenter augeri, nunc detrimentis obsequenter imminui,..." (11.1.538)
70. "...quae caeli luminosa culmina, maris salubria flamina..." (11.4.544-6)
71. "...clementer ac comiter..." (11.21.574)
72. "...Luci, te felicem, te beatum,..." (11.22.576)
73. "...deos inferos et deos superos..." (11.23.580)
74. "Nec dies nec quies..." (11.25.582)
75. "Tibi respondent sidera, redeunt tempora,..." (11.25.584)

#### VIII. Personification

1. "Fruatur diutius trophaeo Fortuna quod fixit ipsa." (1.7.12)
2. "Spongia, cave in mari nata per fluvium transeas." (1.13.24)
3. "Iam iam grabatule..." (1.16.28)
4. "...Aurora roseum quatiens lacertum caelum inquitabat et me securae..." (3.1.100)
5. "...stricto mucrone per totam domum caedes ambulet..." (3.5.108)

6. "...ut meae Veneri Cupido pinnatus assistam tibi." (3.22.132)
7. "...hem audax et temeraria lucerna..." (5.23.232)
8. "Ut primum tenebris abiectis dies inalbebat..." (7.1.298)
9. "...exoculatam esse Fortunam, quae semper suas opes ad malos ..." (7.2.300)
10. "Sed quid ego pluribus de Fortunae scaevitate conqueror?" (7.3.302)
11. "Sed nimirum nihil Fortuna renuente licet homini..." (9.1.400)
12. "...disposita feralem Fortunae nutum latere..." (10.24.514)
13. "...et totas domos et ipsum diem serena facie gaudere sentirem ..." (11.7.550)
14. "Quidquod arbores etiam, quae...splendore candeat." (11.7.550)
15. "...magnisque Fortunae tempestatibus et...Sed utcumque Fortunae..." (11.15.562)
16. "...et Fortunae tempestates mitigas..." (11.25.584)

#### IX. Pleonasm

1. "...luctu et maerore diuturno deformata,..." (1.6.10)
2. "'Ne tu fortunarum lubricas ambages et instabiles incursiones et reciprocas vicissitudines ignoras!'" (1.6.10)
3. "...et ioci et scitum et cavillum;..." (1.7.12)
4. "...avaritiae et sordis infimae infamis homo,..." (1.21.36)
5. "Iam statuas et imagines incessuras,..." (2.1.48)
6. "...senex iam gravis in annis..." (2.2.50)
7. "...habes exoptatam occasionem et voto diutino potiris." (2.6.58)
8. "...verum enim vero..." (2.6.58)
9. "...obstupui et mirabundus steti..." (2.7.58-60)
10. "...me certa et statuta ratio..." (2.8.60)
11. "...in aperto et perspicuo posita prima nostris luminibus..." (2.8.60)
12. "'Hostes' inquit 'Et omnes inimici nostri...' (2.14.70)
13. "...et libidinem incitantes et voluptatem integrantes:..." (2.17.74)
14. "'Ineptias' inquam, 'Mihi narras et nugas meras.'" (2.23.82-4)
15. "...protinus exterminatur: nec mora,..." (2.25.86)
16. "...at illi barbari prorsus et immanes homines..." (3.5.108)
17. "...denique dux et signifer ceterorum..." (3.6.108)
18. "Verum statuas et imagines dignioribus..." (3.11.116)

19. "'Paveo' inquit 'Et formido solide...' (3.15.122)
20. "Tunc horreum quoddam satis validis claustris obsaeptum obseratumque..." (3.28.140)
21. "...anum quandam curvatam gravi senio..." (4.7.152)
22. "...denique solus ac solitarius..." (4.9.156)
23. "...pulverei et iam cinerosi mortui..." (4.18.170)
24. "Quis enim, quamvis fortis et intrepidus..." (4.18.172)
25. "...sed denso conglobatoque cuneo cubiculum..." (4.26.182)
26. "Sed saevum atque ferum vipereumque malum..." (4.33.194)
27. "Maeretur, fletur, lamentatur diebus plusculis:..." (4.33.194)
28. "...quae dum insatiabili animo Psyche, satis et curiosa..." (5.23.232)
29. "...deque eius alto cacumine..." (5.24.234)
30. "...tibi semper cavenda censebam, haec benivole remonebam..." (5.24.234)
31. "...et quantum visu poterat volatus mariti prospiciens extremis..." (5.25.234)
32. "...quam ingluvie voraci..." (5.26.238)
33. "...Cupidinem leni quiete..." (5.26.238)
34. "...gravi vulneris dolore maerentem..." (5.28.240)
35. "...montano scortatu, tu vero marino natatu secesseritis ac per hoc non voluptas ulla, non gratia, non lepos... sociales..." (5.28.240)
36. "...et sentias acidus et amarus..." (5.30.244)
37. "...illam fugitivam volaticam..." (5.31.246)
38. "...tacita secreta..." (6.2.252)
39. "...in tantis exanclatis laboribus defessam..." (6.4.254)
40. "...numinis augusta dignitate..." (6.4.254)
41. "...dominis vetant suscipi, prohibeor..." (6.4.256)
42. "...quae dulce cantitant aves melleis modulis suave resonantes..." (6.6.258)
43. "...et faba commixtisque acervatim confusis..." (6.10.262)
44. "...dispositis atque seiugatis..." (6.10.262)
45. "...digerunt acervum separatimque distributis dissitisque..." (6.10.264)
46. "...inferioris domus unici cubiculi custodia clausus coercebatur acriter..." (6.11.264)
47. "...latenter abscondere..." (6.12.266)
48. "...facili flaventis auri..." (6.13.268)
49. "...de quo fontis atri fuscae..." (6.13.268)
50. "...saxum immani magnitudine procerum et inaccessa salebritate lubricum..." (6.14.268)

51. "...alti culminis diales vias deserit..." (6.15.270)
52. "...consumpsit atque contrivit omne..." (6.16.272)
53. "...ad Tartarum Manesque..." (6.17.272)
54. "...tu nulla voce deprompta tacita praeterito." (6.18.274)
55. "...impetus freno quodam coercendos existimavi..." (6.23.282)
56. "Ac dum avida voracitate cuncta contruncant..." (6.31.294)
57. "...sed infernus somnus ac vere Stygius,...revelatus invadit  
...in ipso vestigio ipsaque semita collapsam..." (6.21.278)
58. "...de nihilo veteris priscaeque doctrinae viros finxisse ac  
pronuntiasse caecam et prorsus exoculatam esse Fortunam..."  
(7.2.300)
59. "Nec mora nec cunctatio..." (7.9.310)
60. "...mulierum secta moresque de..." (7.10.314)
61. "...partesque surreptas clanculo..." (7.11.316)
62. "...et sane gaudens laetusque praecurrebam..." (7.15.322)
63. "...ac si quo casu limo caenoso ripae supercilio lubricante  
oneris impatientia prolapsus deruisssem..." (7.18.326)
64. "...detestatione mansuetos ac mansues..." (7.23.334)
65. "...cervice sublimiter elevata..." (7.24.334)
66. "...eiulans et exinde proclamans stabulum irrumpit meum, tun-  
sisque ac diverberatis..." (7.27.340)
67. "...meam contemnit ac despicit..." (7.27.340)
68. "...sermonibus assiduus et conversatione frequenti..." (8.2.346)
69. "...tunc etiam inermes atque immuniti..." (8.5.350)
70. "...amens et vecordia percita cursuque bacchata furibundo..."  
(8.6.352)
71. "...statim exactis puella protinus festinat..." (8.7.354)
72. "...in pectore, immo vero penitus in medullis luctu ac maerore  
..." (8.7.356)
73. "...nosque pellunt crebris tundentes fustibus." (8.21.378)
74. "...iam fugiens effugere vel..." (8.24.384)
75. "...tunc mulier callida et ad huiusmodi flagitia perastutula..."  
(9.5.406)
76. "...fide tenebrarum contectus atque absconditus..." (9.18.428)
77. "...confestim magna cum festinatione..." (10.12.492)
78. "...ut sola et sine ullo comite..." (10.24.514)
79. "...nudo et intecto corpore..." (10.31.528)
80. "...cunctantique lente vestigio..." (10.32.532)
81. "...impetus comprimens terraeque claustra cohibens..." (11.2.540)
82. "...sublimen destrinxerat verticem..." (11.3.542)
83. "...clementer ac comiter..." (11.21.574)

84. "...sed intentus miti quiete et probabili taciturnitate..." (11.22.576)  
 85. "...non obscuris imperiis evidenter monuit..." (11.22.576)  
 86. "Nec moratus conveni protinus eum..." (11.27.588)  
 87. "...non obumbrato vel obtecto calvitio..." (11.30.594)

## X. Puns

1. "...scortum scorteum..." (1.8.14)  
 2. "...et nunc etiam spiritu deficior...et aliquid cibatus refo-  
vendo spiritu desidero." (1.18.32)  
 3. "Nostine Milonem quendam e primoribus? Arrisit et inquit, 'Vere primus...' (1.21.36)  
 4. "...scaevam, an saevam verius dixerim, miser incidit." (2.13.68)  
 5. "...obsaeptum obseratumque..." (3.28.140)  
 6. "...quamvis asino sentire praestabant..." (4.1.144)  
 7. "...tam beatum eius differamus praeconium: nec sunt etiam beati..." (5.10.214)  
 8. "...non videbis si videris..." (5.11.216)  
 9. "...sic ignora Psyche sponte in Amoris incidit amorem...magisque cupidine flagrans Cupidinis..." (5.23.232)  
 10. "...ab ipsa Venere septem savia suavia..." (6.8.260)  
 11. "...inquit 'Superi, tandem meis supremis periculis opem facite  
..." (6.28.290)  
 12. "...suorum invita remansit in vita..." (8.6.354)

## XI. Repetition

1. "....Minus Hercule...factu familia senties." (1.4.6)  
 2. "Amatorem suum,...proveniret." (1.9.16)  
 3. "Quid uxor? Quid liberi? Quid vernaculi?" (1.26.44)  
 4. "...ut et lapides...et aves...et arbores...et fontanos...et  
imagines...et id genus...et iubaris..." (2.1.48)  
 5. "Quam pulchre quamque festive...intorques!" (2.7.60)  
 6. "...licet illa caelo deiecta,...licet, inquam, Venus ipsa  
fuerit, licet omni Gratiarum...nec Vulcano suo." (2.8.60-2)  
 7. "Quid cum capillis color gratus et nitor splendidus illucet..."

- ...non possit audire." (2.9.62)
8. "...qui dies...qui fundamenta...qui negotiatori...qui viatori  
...qui navigiis..." (2.12.68)
9. "...iam deposita...iam profusis...iam dinumeratis..." (2.13.68)
10. "...rosa sarta et rosa soluta..." (2.16.72)
11. "...et nox provecta et nox altior et dein concubia altiora  
et iam nox intempesta..." (2.25.86)
12. "'Quin abis'...Quin abis?..." (2.25.86)
13. "...offendere...impingere...suffodere...insultare...distrare  
here..." (2.26.86)
14. "...per caelestia sidera, per inferna numina, per...,per...,  
et per..." (2.28.92)
15. "...iam tumore...iam salubris...iam spiritu...iam Stygiis..."  
(2.29.92)
16. "Desine...desine...Dabo...dabo..." (2.30.94)
17. "...iamque sublimo suggestu...iam praecone publico...repente  
cuncti consona...tantum theatro..." (3.2.102)
18. "...reum tot caedibus impiatum, reum...,reum..." (3.3.106)
19. "...nec qui laverim, qui terserim qui domum..." (3.12.118)
20. "...iam scies omnem...iam scies herae meae..." (3.15.122)
21. "...nunc rore...nunc lacte...nunc melle..." (3.18.126)
22. "...sic tuis istis micantibus osculis et rubentibus bucculis  
et...et...et..." (3.19.128)
23. "Nec mora...quas neque sublevare neque dimovere ac ne perfringere...  
ne vulvarum..." (4.10.158)
24. "...quis tantus ingenii, quis facundiae, qui..." (4.13.162)
25. "...nam diutina captivitate...redivere numerum." (4.14.164)
26. "Misera, tali domo, tanta familia, tam caris vernulis, tam  
sanctis..." (4.24.180)
27. "Em nunc certe, nunc maxime funditus perii, nunc spei saluti  
ferae..." (4.25.180)
28. "...mihi de domo, de thalamo, de cubiculo, de toro..." (4.27.184)
29. "En rerum naturae prisca parens, en elementorum origo initialis,  
en orbis totius..." (4.30.188)
30. "'Per ego te'...per tuae sagittae dulcia vulnera, per..."  
(4.31.190)
31. "...nec quisquam, non rex, non regius, nec de plebe saltem..."  
(4.32.192)
32. "Cum gentes et populi...,cum novam me Venerem...,tunc dolere,  
tunc flere, tunc me...iam sentio, iam video..." (4.34.196)
33. "...festino felices istas nuptias obire, festino generosum..."  
(4.34.196)
34. "...sic cubicula, sic porticus, sic ipsae valvae..." (5.1.202)

35. "...quod nullo vinculo, nullo claustro, nullo custode..."  
(5.2.202)
36. "...ac ne videre...nec lavacro nec cibo nec ulla denique..."  
(5.5.206)
37. "...Per istos cinnameos...,per teneras...per pectus..."  
(5.13.220)
38. "Iubet citharum loqui, psallitur; tibias agere, sonatur; choros  
canere, cantatur,..." (5.15.222)
39. "Festinat, differt; audet, trepidat; diffidit, irascitur..."  
(5.21.230)
40. "...ab isto titubante et saepius vacillante vestigio deque  
nimio pallore corporis et assiduo suspiritu, immo et ipsis  
marcentibus oculis tuis..." (5.25.236)
41. "...Luctum desine et pone maerorem..." (5.25.236)
42. "...ipsum illum deae Veneris filium, ipsum inquam Cupidinem  
leni quiete sopitum..." (5.26.238)
43. "...quod ille quidem montano scortatu, tu vero marino natatu  
secesseritis ac per hoc non voluptas ulla, non gratia, non lepos,  
...non amicitiae sociales, non..." (5.28.240)
44. "...sive illa de Nympharum populo seu de Horarum numero seu  
de Musarum choro vel de mearum..." (5.28.242)
45. "...quae castiget asperrime nugonem istum, pharetram explicet  
et sagittas dearmet, arcum enodet,..." (5.30.244)
46. "Per ego te...,per laetificas...,per tacita secreta,...et  
per famulorum..." (6.2.252)
47. "...sive tu Sami,...sive celsae Carthaginis,...sive prope  
ripas Inachi..." (6.4.254)
48. "...partim ne petulanti luxurie vulnus gravaret, partim ne  
cum sua cupita..." (6.11.264)
49. "...sed dum meridies solis sedaverit vaporem et pecua spiritus  
fluvialis serenitate conquieverint, poteris sub..." (6.12.266)
50. "'Discede,' et 'Quid facis? Vide,' et 'Quid agis? Cave,' et  
'Fuge,' et 'Peribis,'..." (6.14.270)
51. "...rursus remeans canis saevitiam offula reliqua redime...  
residuaque navitae reddita stipe..." (6.19-20.276-8)
52. "...quas tibi gratias perhibeo, quos honores habebo, quos cibos  
exhibeo?" (6.28.290)
53. "Accedes antiquis et ipse miraculis et iam...supernatasse et  
Arionem delphinum gubernasse et Europam tauro supercubasse..."  
(6.29.290-2)
54. "Nec sectae collegii nec...ac ne meae...,nec feras nec cruces  
nec ignes nec tormenta..." (6.31.294)
55. "...moriturus quidem nihilominus sed moriturus integer..."  
(7.24.334)
56. "...communi carior cariorque factus..." (8.2.346)
57. "...magis magisque praeclusos..." (8.3.348)



58. "Nec ulla caprea nec pavens damula nec prae ceteris..." (8.4.348)
59. "...amens et vecordia percita cursuque bacchata furibundo per plateas populosas..." (8.6.352)
60. "Sed Thrasyllus nimium nimius..." (8.7.354)
61. "...pervicaci, partim per semet ipsum, partim per ceteros..." (8.7.356)
62. "Illum amicum, coaetaneum, contubernalem, fratrem denique... ciere, necnon interdum manus Charites a pulsandis uberibus amovere, luctum sedare, eiulatum coercere, verbis..." (8.7.354)
63. "...adhuc flentem maritum, adhuc vestes lacerantem, adhuc capillos distrahentem..." (8.8.356)
64. "Mi coniux...etsi pectori tuo iam perimitur nostri memoria... modo ne in Thrasylli manum sacrilegam convenias, neve...nec mensam...nec toro..." (8.8.358)
65. "'Adhuc' inquit 'Tui fratis...,adhuc odor...,adhuc formosus...'" (8.9.360)
66. "'En' inquit 'Fidus coniugis mei comes, en venator egregius, en carus maritus.'..." (8.12.362)
67. "Lumen certe non videbis, manu comitis indigebis, Chariten non tenebis..." (8.12.364)
68. "...attolle vacuum faciem, vindictam recognosce, infortunium intellege, aerumnas computa..." (8.12.364)
69. "Sic pudicae mulieri tui placuerunt oculi, sic faces..." (8.12.364)
70. "'Abicite' inquit, 'Importunas lacrimas, abicite luctum...'" (8.13.366)
71. "Gerebamus infantulos et mulieres, gerebamus pullos..." (8.15.368)
72. "...hic lanceam, ille venabulum, alius gerebat spicula, fustem alius...quin acies esset proeliaris..." (8.16.372)
73. "Scitote qualem cinaedum et senem cinaedum,..." (8.24.384)
74. "Si possessiones praestinatorum quaereret, merito...Si qui de profectione...Si proelium..." (9.8.412)
75. "...iugo subactum iri et praedam de rapinis...captum iri..." (9.8.412)
76. "...promerent potius aureum cantharum, promerent auctoramentum..." (9.9.414)
77. "Nec defuit qui, manu super...Nec isto saltem..." (9.10.414)
78. "Ibi complurium iumentorum multivii circuitus intorguebant... rerum perpeti etiam nocte...lucubrabant..." (9.11.416)
79. "Nec tamen...sed nec tamen...sed,..." (9.11.416)
80. "Nec ullum uspiam cruciabilis...Nec immerito..." (9.13.420)
81. "...saeva, scaeva, virosa, ebriosa, pervicax, pertinax..." (9.14.422)

82. "...dignus Hercule solus omnium matronarum deliciis perfrui, dignus solus..." (9.16.424)
83. "...quidvis facere, quidvis pati paratus,..." (9.18.428)
84. "...nec auri tamen splendor flammeus oculos ipsius exire potuit, sed..." (9.19.428)
85. "Commodum novis amplexibus amori...,commodum prima stipendia..." (9.20.430)
86. "...iam pulsat, iam clamat, iam saxo fores verberat..." (9.20.430)
87. "Dignus Hercule, dignus qui..." (9.21.434)
88. "...illam perfidam, illam impudicam..." (9.26.440)
89. "...commotus exsanguis pallore trepidantem..." (9.27.442)
90. "...nudis et intectis pedibus lurore..." (9.30.446)
91. "Adhuc omnibus expectatione taeterrimae formidinis torpidis..." (9.35.454)
92. "Quod oleum flammae, quod sulphur incendio, quod flagellum Furiae..." (9.36.456)
93. "Haec erant quae prodigiosa praesagaverant ostenta, haec quae ..." (9.38.460)
94. "...qua pugnis, qua cubitis, qua morsibus..." (9.40.464)
95. "Quid venae pulsus, quid caloris intemperantia, quid fatigatus anhelitus..." (10.2.474)
96. "Habes solitudinis plenam fiduciam, habes capax..." (10.3.476-8)
97. "...non acerba filii morte, non parricidii conscientia, non infortunio domus, non luctu mariti..." (10.5.480)
98. "...atque ibi, tum fletu, tum precibus,...illum incestum paterno thalamo, illum parricidam..." (10.6.482)
99. "...quibus autem verbis accusator urserit, quibus rebus diluerit..." (10.7.484)
100. "...quod se vocasset indignatus...quod ulciscens iniuriam..., quod promisisset grande...,quod recusanti mortem...,quod venenum...,quod ad..." (10.7.486)
101. "...si vere peremptus est, si morte praeventus est,..." (10.11.492)
102. "...possidet asinum luctantem, asinum saltantem, asinum voces humanas..." (10.17.504)
103. "...partim mercedes amplissimas acceptando, partim novum spectaculum domino praeparando..." (10.23.510)
104. "...dehinc detestari, dehinc crudelissimis laqueis mortis insidiari: tale denique..." (10.24.514)
105. "...certo certior contendit..." (10.28.522)
106. "...sed privatus humana manu, privatus digitis..." (10.29.524)
107. "...nunc in orbem rotatum flexuosi, nunc in obliquam..." (10.29.526)

108. "...hinc Gratiae gratissimae..." (10.32.530)
109. "...nunc mite conniventibus, nunc acre comminantibus..." (10.32.532)
110. "...immo forensia pecora, immo vero togati vulturii..." (10.33.532)
111. "...ego praeter pudorem obeundi publice concubitus, prater..." (10.34.536)
112. "...nunc incrementis consequenter augeri, nunc..." (11.1.538)
113. "...sive tu Ceres..., seu tu caelestis Venus, ...seu Phoebi soror..., seu nocturnis ululatus..." (11.2.540)
114. "...quoquo nomine, quoquo ritu, quaque facie..." (11.2.540)
115. "...tu meis iam nunc extremis aerumnis subsiste, tu..., tu saevis..." (11.2.540)
116. "...sit satis laborum, sit satis periculorum..." (11.2.540-2)
117. "...redde me conspectui meorum, redde me meo Lucio..." (11.2.542)
118. "...nunc albo candore lucida, nunc croceo flore lutea, nunc..." (11.3.542)
119. "Adsum tuos miserata casus, adsum favens et propitia..." (11.5.546)
120. "...quod vives. Vives autem beatus, vives in mea..." (11.6.548)
121. "...nulla calliditate, nulla sollertia praedita..." (11.10.556)
122. "...nunc atra nunc aurea facie sublimis..." (11.11.556)
123. "Quid latrones, quid ferae, quid servitium, quid asperriorum..., quid metus?" (11.15.562)
124. "...quam purissime purificatam deae..." (11.16.564)
125. "...Videant irreligiosi; videant et errorem suum..." (11.15.564)
126. "...dicerem si dicere liceret, cognosceres si liceret audire..." (11.23.580)
127. "...deus deum magnorum potior, et maiorum summus, et summorum maximus, et maximorum regnator Osiris..." (11.30.594)

## XII. Rhetorical Questions

1. "Mi Socrates, quid istud? Quae facies? Quod flagitium?" (1.6.10)
2. "'Quid' inquam 'De me fiet, ubi iste iugulatus mane paruerit? Cui videbor verisimilia dicere proferens vera?' (1.14.24)
3. "Ubi vulnus? Spongia ubi? Ubi postremum cicatrix tam alta, tam recens?" (1.18.30)
4. "Nec amicis...deducitis?" (1.25.42)

5. "Quid cum capillis...imaginem gratiores? Quid cum frequenti...dorsa permanat?" (2.9.62)
6. "An mihi quisquam tam mitis...pronuntiare poterit?" (3.1.100)
7. "'Ain?' inquit 'Vulpinaris amasio, meque sponte...compellis? Sic inermem vix a lupulis...videbo quando?'" (3.22.132)
8. "Quis tantus ingenii,...posset explicare?" (4.13.162)
9. "Quin potius...prospicis? An ignoras...incubare?" (4.17.168)
10. "Quis enim,...cohiberet?" (4.18.172)
11. "...vel omnino vivere potero?" (4.24.180)
12. "'Quid infelicem senectam fletu diutino cruciatis? Quid spiritum...eiulatibus fatigatis? Quid lacrimis...veneranda foedatis? Quid laceratis in vestris oculis mea lumina? Quid canitiem scinditis? Quid pectora, quid ubera sancta tunditis? Haec erunt vobis egregiae formositatis meae praeclara praemia?" (4.34.196)
13. "Quid differo? Quid detrecto...natus est?" (4.34.196)
14. "'Haecine mihi pollicebare, Psyche mea? Quid iam de te tuus maritus exspecto, quid spero?'" (5.6.206)
15. "Hocine tibi complacuit, ut utroque...sustineremus? Et nos quidem...bonorum copia novit?" (5.9.212)
16. "'Meministi consilium vestrum,...ancipiti novacula peremerem?'" (5.26.238)
17. "Quidni?...Sed nunc irrisui habita quid agam? Quo me conferam? Quibus modis stelionem istum cohibeam? Petamne auxilium ab inimica mea Sobrietate, quam...saepius?" (5.30.244)
18. "'Quid tale, domina, deliquit...gestias? Quod autem, oramus, isti crimen si puellae lepidae libenter arrisit? An ignoras...oblita es? An quod aetatem portat bellule,...videtur? Mater autem tu...filio reprehendes? Quis autem te deum, quis...praecludas officinam?'" (5.31.246-8)
19. "'Scio an istic meus degat dominus?'" (6.1.250)
20. "'Ain, Psyche miseranda?'" (6.2.250)
21. "Iam quae possunt...suffragia? Quorsum itaque tantis...effugiam? Quin igitur...mitigas? Quid scias...repperias?" (6.5.256)
22. "Tandem ancilla nequissima,...coepisti? An pro cetera morum...sustinuerimus?" (6.8.260)
23. "'Tandem' inquit, 'Dignata es...salutare? An potius maritum, ...venisti?'" (6.9.260)
24. "...quidni, quae suis pedibus...commeare cogeretur?" (6.17.272)
25. "'Quid te' inquit 'Praecipitem, o misella, quaeris extinguere? Quidque iam novissimo periculo laborique...succumbis?'" (6.17.272)
26. "Quid stas, Luci, vel quid iam novissimum expectas?...Quin igitur...licet consulis? Habe summam...an custodiam anus...poteris? Sed quo gentium...dabit? Haec quidem...auferat secum?" (6.26.286)

27. "Tuque, praesidium...quos cibos exhibeo?" (6.28.290)
28. "Quid facis, infelix puella? Quid agis? Cur festinas ad Orcum? Quid...contendis?" (6.29.292)
29. "Quorsum istam festinanti...formidatis? An tu, probissima puella,...properabas?" (6.30.292)
30. "Quam meis tam magnis...deflebam cadaver?" (6.32.296)
31. "Sed quid ego pluribus de Fortunae scaevitate conqueror?" (7.3.302)
32. "Supplicatum Marti...socios indagaturi?" (7.10.314)
33. "Hem oblita es...puella virgo? Et illi nesciocui...percussorem praeponis? Nec te conscientia stimulat,...tibi libet? Quid, si quo modo latronis...persenserint? Non rursum...mihi parabis?" (7.11.316)
34. "Quousque ergo frustra pascemus igninum istum?" (7.20.330)
35. "Nam pro deum fidem...arcere morsibus misello puero potueris? An ipsum quidem saepius...nequisti?...An ignoras eos etiam,...solere puniri?" (7.27.340-2)
36. "Quidni, cum flamma saevi...amburat homines?" (8.2.346)
37. "Quid stupore confusi vel etiam cassa formidine...amittimus? Quin equos inscendimus? Quin ocius indipiscimur?" (8.5.350)
38. "Sed quid mora temporis dignum...imaginaris amplexus?" (8.12.364)
39. "Quid miseros homines...obteritis? Quas praedas inhiatis? Quae damna vindicatis?" (8.18.374)
40. "De cibo vel poculo vel omnino ulla refectione nunc cogitatis? An nulli scitis quo loco consederitis?" (8.19.376)
41. "Quem ad finem...cribrum?" (8.23.382)
42. "Quanquam enim prudens...et domi poterit iuvare?" (8.24.384)
43. "Praesenti malo perterritus...intueris?" (8.31.396)
44. "Adhuccine miserum istum asinum iugi furore iactari credimus?" (9.3.404)
45. "Siccine vacuus et otiosus...aliquid cibatus parabis?" (9.5.408)
46. "Et quid istic est?" (9.6.408)
47. "Vides istud dolium,...praestat amplius?" (9.6.408)
48. "'Vis' inquit 'Verum scire, materfamilias?'" (9.7.410)
49. "Quin tu, quicumque...de malo habere?" (9.7.410)
50. "Quidni?" (9.9.412)
51. "Iam de meo iumentario...modum memorem?" (9.13.420)
52. "Nosti quendam Barbarum nostrae...vulgus appellat?" (9.17.424)
53. "Quidni?" (9.17.426)
54. "'Tu autem,' inquit 'Tam mollis ac...adulteri vindicas?'" (9.28.444)
55. "Unde autem tu,...scire potuisti?" (9.30.446)

56. "Quid venae pulsus...vicissitudines?" (10.2.474)
57. "Videat et suum sigillum...comparaverit?" (10.9.490)
58. "Unde enim scio...venenum?" (10.26.518)
59. "Quid pluribus?" (10.27.520)
60. "Quid ergo miramini...stirpis exitio?" (10.33.532)
61. "Quale autem et illud iudicium...scientiae magistros?" (10.33.534)
62. "Nonne divinae prudentiae...in ipsius nomen?" (10.33.534)
63. "Quid latrones, quid...Fortunae profuit?" (11.15.562)
64. "'O' inquit 'Luci, te felicem,...demoraris?'" (11.22.576)
65. "Mirabar quid rei...quidni?" (11.26.586)
66. "'An tu' inquit 'si quam...committere?' Ergo igitur...quidni?'" (11.28.590)

### XIII. Rhyme (end and internal)

1. "...per vulnus effunderet et spiritum rebulliret." (1.13.24)
2. "...aurum in gemma et in tunicis, ibi inflexum, hic intextum..." (2.2.50)
3. "...muscis et herbis et foliis et virgulis..." (2.4.54)
4. "...maga primi nominis et monis carminis..." (2.5.56)
5. "...scaevam, an saevam..." (2.13.68)
6. "...quisquam tam mitis tamque..." (3.1.100)
7. "...sedulo singulos atque universos vos pro..." (3.3.104)
8. "...quam cruentem exercuit, impune commiserit..." (3.3.104)
9. "...permotus statim profugit...perpetem noctem delituit..." (3.3.104)
10. "...reum tot caedibus impiatum, reum coram depremsum, reum peregrinum..." (3.3.106)
11. "Unus denique et manu promptior et corpore vastior..." (3.5.106)
12. "...qui sopitus iacebit, trucidetur; qui repugnare temptaverit, feriatur..." (3.5.108)
13. "Sic salvi recedemus, si salvum in domo neminem reliquerimus." (3.5.108)
14. "...miserorum pignorum meorum peremptorem..." (3.9.112)
15. "Quamquam enim iam in..." (3.9.114)
16. "...nec qui laverim, qui terserim, qui domum rursum reverterim..." (3.12.118)
17. "...iam iamque..." (3.14.122)
18. "...nunc rore fontano, nunc lacte vaccino, nunc melle montano..." (3.18.126)

19. "...micantibus oculis et rudentibus bucculis et renidentibus crinibus et hiantibus osculis et fragrantibus papillis..." (3.19.128)
20. "...nec ullae plumulae nec usquam pinnulae..." (3.24.134)
21. "...invocare temptavi,...validum clamitavi..." (3.29.142)
22. "...vel artis magicae susceptione vel indicii futuri criminatione..." (3.29.142)
23. "...aureorum argentariorumque nummorum ac vaxculorum vestisque..." (4.8.154)
24. "...incondite pulmentis acervatim, panibus aggeratim, poculis agminatim ingestis..." (4.8.154)
25. "...qui metu officiorum ac munerum publicorum..." (4.9.156)
26. "...quas neque sublevare neque dimovere ac ne perfringere..." (4.10.158)
27. "...constituti vel opprimendi nostri vel deserendi socii..." (4.11.158)
28. "...et genere primarius et opibus plurimus et liberalitate praecipuus..." (4.13.162)
29. "...praeter domesticis venationibus captas, praeter largis emptionibus partas..." (4.13.164)
30. "...et aestiva flagrantia maceratae, pigra etiam sessione languidae..." (4.14.164)
31. "...lucos consitos et specus roridos et fontes amoenos semper..." (4.17.168)
32. "...taedis, lucernis, cereis, sebaciis, et ceteris nocturni luminis instrumentis..." (4.19.172)
33. "...lanceis, destrictis denique gladiis..." (4.19.172)
34. "...sed iam morsibus laceratus ferroque laniatus, obnixo mugitu et ferino fremitu..." (4.21.174)
35. "...reservavit, vitam fato reddidit..." (4.21.174)
36. "...nobis perivit sed a gloria non perivit..." (4.21.176)
37. "...partim gladiis armati, partim in Lemures reformati..." (4.22.176)
38. "...et animi dolore et faucium tundore..." (4.24.180)
39. "...de domo, de thalamo, de cubiculo, de toro..." (4.27.184)
40. "Sacra diae praetereunter, templa deformantur..." (4.29.188)
41. "Spectatur ab omnibus, laudatur ab omnibus,..." (4.32.192)
42. "Maeretur, fletur, lamentatur..." (4.33.194)
43. "Ducite me, et cui sors addixit scopulo sistite; festino felices istas nuptias obire, festino generosum illum maritum meum videre." (4.34.196)
44. "...quod nullo vinculo, nullo claustro, nullo..." (5.2.202)
45. "...nemo pareret, chorus tamen esse pateret." (5.3.204)

46. "...ut sorores videat, luctus mulceat, ora conferat..." (5.6.208)
47. "...sed identidem monuit ac saepe terrui..." (5.6.208)
48. "...et imprimens oscula suasoria et ingerens verba mulcentia et iungens..." (5.6.208)
49. "Mi mellite, mi marite..." (5.6.208)
50. "En orba et saeva et iniqua Fortuna!" (5.9.212)
51. "...gerebat ferebatque..." (5.9.212)
52. "...dein cucurbita calviorem et quovis puero pusilliorem..." (5.9.212)
53. "...nec omnino spiro, nisi...opibus deiecero." (5.10.214)
54. "...non videbis si videris..." (5.11.216)
55. "...florebat, et divinae...plaudebat et...gestiebat et...gaudebat..." (5.11.216-18)
56. "...et casus extremus: ex secus infestus et sanguis inimicus..." (5.12.218)
57. "...psallitur, tibiae agere, sonatur; choros canere, cantatur..." (5.15.222)
58. "...pervolant et inde...devolant..." (5.17.224)
59. "...statuto consilio et obstinato animo..." (5.21.230)
60. "...alios antependulos, alios retropendulos..." (5.22.232)
61. "...sive perfidia pessima sive invidia noxia sive quod tale corpus continge et quasi basiare..." (5.23.232)
62. "Haec tibi semper cavenda censebam, haec benivole remonebam..." (5.24.234)
63. "...ipsum illum deae Veneris filium, ipsum...sopitum..." (5.26.238)
64. "...cautium membris iactatis atque dissipatis..." (5.27.240)
65. "...non nuptiae conjugales, non amicitiae sociales, non liberum caritates..." (5.28.240)
66. "...pharetram explicit et sagittas dearmet, arcum enodet, taedam deflammet,..." (5.30.244)
67. "...curiose dividit et discretim remota rite componit..." (6.1.250)
68. "...pinnata curricula et glebae siculae sulcamina et currum rapacem et terram tenacem..." (6.2.252)
69. "...retrahere vel occultam demonstrare...regis filiam, Veneris ancillam..." (6.8.260)
70. "Puellam elegit et virginitate privavit: teneat, possideat..." (6.23.282)
71. "...chorum canerent et tibiae inflarent, Satyrus et Paniscus ad fistulam dicerent..." (6.24.284)
72. "...prehendit ac me...contendit." (6.27.288)
73. "...quas tibi gratias perhibeo, quos honeres habebo, quos cibos exhibeo?" (6.28.290)



74. "...et Phrixum arieti supernatasse et Arionem delphinum gubernasse et Europam tauro supercubasse." (6.29.290-2)
75. "...fugere possunt, ambulare nesciunt!" (6.30.294)
76. "...censeret...praeciperet." (6.31.294)
77. "...inalbebat et...collustrabat,...sic enim indicabat." (7.1.298)
78. "...quos procul si videret, fugere deberet,..." (7.2.300)
79. "...eique suasisse ac denique persuasisse." (7.4.304)
80. "...sustinebo, si quod...dissimulavero." (7.9.312)
81. "...fugam discursuram; non nihil...depensuram." (7.9.312)
82. "Procurrunt parentes, affines, clientes, alumni famuli,..." (7.13.318)
83. "...manum porrigere, capistro suspendere, cauda sublevare..." (7.18.328)
84. "...meam contemnit ac despicit...credit..." (7.27.340)
85. "...calcibus potuisti,...simili nequisti?" (7.27.340)
86. "...eriperes,...aufugeres." (7.27.340-2)
87. "...denegarint,...id ipsum fecerint..." (7.27.342)
88. "Nec ulla caprea nec pavens damula nec prae ceteris feris mitior cerva,..." (8.4.348-50)
89. "...invisitatus...obesus,...squalidus,...hispidus,...flammeus,...fulmineus;..." (8.4.348-50)
90. "...pavore deterriti et...consueti, tunc...immuniti..." (8.5.350)
91. "...plangere...reddere et...fallere." (8.7.354)
92. "...uberibus amovere, luctum sedare, eiulatum coercere,...obtundere...nectere...adhibere...nutrire..." (8.7.354)
93. "...alioquin reverens, invita...succumbens..." (8.7.356)
94. "...adhuc flentem maritum, adhuc vestes lacerantem,..." (8.8.356)
95. "...gerebat venenum, crebris...somnum." (8.11.362)
96. "...en venator egregius, en carus maritus..." (8.12.362)
97. "Lumen certe non videbis, manu comitis indigebis, Chariten non tenebis, nuptias non frueris, nec mortis quiete recreaberis nec vitae voluptate laetaberis..." (8.12.364)
98. "...libabo et...parentabo." (8.12.364)
99. "...cruentum peremptorem, punita...praedonem." (8.13.366)
100. "...non laciniatim disperso sed cuneatim stipato..." (8.15.370)
101. "...non tam Hercule...ambulare..." (8.17.372)
102. "Quid miseros homines et laboriosos viatores..." (8.18.374)
103. "...quidem sentiam, sed per corporis, ut videtis,...nequeam..." (8.20.378)

104. "et animo fortior et aetate iuvenior et corpore validior..." (8.21.378)
105. "Qua re cognita et cum pastoris sermone collata,..." (8.21.378)
106. "...et vetulum et extritis ungulis debilem et dolore deformem et in hebeti pigritia ferocem nec quicquam..." (8.23.382)
107. "...cinaedum et senem cinaedum,..." (8.24.384)
108. "An me putas inepte, iumento fero posse deam committere, ut discurrere et...quaerere?" (8.25.386)
109. "...trahebat ad...proclamat." (8.26.386)
110. "...pro virgine sed asinum pro homine succidaneum videre..." (8.26.388)
111. "...sed diu vivas et dominis placeas et meis...consulas..." (8.26.388)
112. "...indusiati et deformiter quisque formati..." (8.27.388)
113. "Sed ubi tandem fatigati, vel...satiati..." (8.28.392)
114. "...latenter invaserat, laetusque...evaserat..." (8.31.396)
115. "...pedibus, ad...calcibus velitatus." (9.1.400)
116. "...nec consilio prudenti vel remedio sagaci divinae..." (9.1.400)
117. "...nam Myrtilum mulionem et Hephaestionem cocum et..." (9.2.402)
118. "...libertatem nactus, solitariae...amplexus, super...abiec-tus..." (9.2.402)
119. "...voraginosam, partim stagnanti palude fluidam et...lubricam..." (9.9.412)
120. "...laborem legatum iri, vel otiosum certe cibatum iri." (9.11.418)
121. "...dimoto, nexu machinae liberatum applicant praesepio." (9.12.418)
122. "...fatigatus...perditus, tamen...attonitus et satis anxius..." (9.12.418)
123. "...obtecti, nonnulli...iniecti, cuncti...manifesti, frontes litterati et capillum semirasi et pedes annulati..." (9.12.418)
124. "...hiulci, pectora...exulcerati, costas...renudati,...porrecti...exasperati." (9.13.420)
125. "...saeva, scaeva, virosa, ebriosa, pervicax, pertinax,..." (9.14.422)
126. "...sinebat, et...assidebat, ac...conglutinatus,..." (9.17.426)
127. "...domi cohiberet, aurum tamen foras evocaret..." (9.19.430)
128. "...non modo capere, verum saltem contingere, quam exitio suo viderat,...percitus nuntiat." (9.19.430)
129. "...iam pulsat, iam clamat, iam saxo fores verberat..." (9.20.430)

130. "...vinculis obrutus, non quidem...prehensus,...permixtus..." (9.21.432)
131. "...conteras et insuper...perferas." (9.21.434)
132. "At pudica uxor statim cenas saliares comparat, vina pretiosa defaecat." (9.22.434)
133. "...illam perfidam illam impudicam..." (9.26.440)
134. "...partiario tractabo, nec...dimicabo, ut sine ulla...lectulo..." (9.27.442)
135. "...revertitur et ad...accenditur..." (9.29.444)
136. "...madefactus, atque...cohibitus,..." (9.33.450)
137. "...pecua trucidando, boves...obterendo..." (9.35.454)
138. "...restituere, sed apud...delitescere." (9.41.466)
139. "...non fabulam legere, et a socco ad cothurnum ascendere..." (10.2.474)
140. "...Hercule, non patiar vel...sumere, vel hunc...evadere." (10.11.492)
141. "...didicissem, verens ne si daturum me negassem,..." (10.11.492)
142. "...fratres manere, ab isto...discedere..." (10.14.498)
143. "...et ipse constantiam, quod...querimoniam,...tacitus ingemescebam,..." (10.14.498)
144. "...pinguitie compleveram, corium...molliveram, pilum...nutriveram." (10.15.498-500)
145. "...possidet asinum luctantem, asinum saltantem, asinum voces humanas intellegentem, sensum nutibus exprimentem." (10.17.504)
146. "...non qualia in lupanari solent basiola iactari vel meretricum poscinumma vel adventorum negantinumma..." (10.21.508)
147. "...memet mafecebam,...suscitaram." (10.21.510)
148. "...mercedes amplissimas acceptando, partim...praeparando..." (10.23.510)
149. "...virgini diem flagitabat, nec...quibat, quod solum potuit,...aperuit..." (10.23.512)
150. "...sceleris amoliretur et quam...lucraretur..." (10.26.518)
151. "...forma conspicui, veste nitidi, incessu gestuosi..." (10.29.524)
152. "...in orbem rotatum flextuosi, nunc...connexi et...cuneati... et in catervae discidium separati..." (10.29.526)
153. "...corpus candidum quod caelo demeat, amictus caerulus quod mari remeat..." (10.31.528)
154. "...Indica testudine pellucidus, pulmea congerie tumidus, veste serica floridus..." (10.34.536)
155. "...deflexerat, et vespernae me quieti...somnus oppresserat." (10.35.536)
156. "...secreta, certus etiam...providentia,...ferina,...vegetari,...augeri, nunc...imminui..." (11.1.538)

157. "...ista luce feminea collustrans cuncta moenia et...semina et  
...lumina..." (11.2.540)
158. "...sit satis laborum, sit satis periculorum..." (11.2.540-2)
159. "...tenui pertexta, nunc...lucida,...lutea...flammida."  
(11.3.542)
160. "...summa numinum, regina manium, prima caelitem, deorum...  
uniformis, quae caeli luminosa culmina, maris salubria flamina  
..." (11.4.544)
161. "...deum Matrem,...Minervam,...Venerem,...Diam,...Proserpinam,  
...Cererem...Rhamnusiam illi..." (11.5.546)
162. "...vives autem beatus, vives in mea tutela gloriosus..."  
(11.6.548)
163. "Mulieres candido splendent amicimine, vario laetantes ges-  
tamine, verno florentes coronamine..." (11.9.552-4)
164. "...cervix procera cohibetur, os et caput rotundatur, aures...  
parvitatem, dentes...minutiem,..." (11.13.560)
165. "...faberrime factam,...variegatam..." (11.16.564)
166. "...tu rotas orbem, lumnas solem, regis mundum, calcas Tar-  
tarum. Tibi respondent sidera, redeunt tempora, gaudent nu-  
mina, serviunt elementa: tuo nutu spirant flamina, nutriunt  
nubila, germinant semina, crescunt germina." (11.25.584)

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Primary Sources

- Adlington, W., trans. and Goold, G.P., ed. Apuleius: The Golden Ass. London: William Heinemann Ltd., 1977.
- Bond, R.W., ed. The Complete Works of John Lyly. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1902.

### Secondary Sources

- Baldwin, T.W. William Shakspeare's Small Latine & Lesse Greeke. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1944.
- Baugh, Albert C. A Literary History of England. New York: Meridith Publishing Company, 1967.
- Bernhard, Max. Der Stil Des Apuleius Von Madaura. Amsterdam: Verlag Adolf M. Hakkert, 1965.
- Bossier, Gaston. Roman Africa. New York: The Knickerbocker Press, 1899.
- Child, Clarence G. John Lyly and Euphuism. A. Deichert Publishing Company, 1894.
- Clark, Peter. English Provincial Society from the Reformation to the Revolution. Hassocks, Sussex: The Harvester Press, 1977.
- Clarke, M.L. Classical Education in Britain. Cambridge: The University Press, 1959.
- Feuillerat, A. John Lyly. Cambridge: The University Press, 1910.
- Graves, Robert. Introduction to New Larousse Encyclopedia of Mythology. New York: The Hamlyn Publishing Group Limited, 1977.
- Haight, Elizabeth Hazelton. Apuleius and His Influence. Norwood, Massachusetts: The Plimpton Press, 1927.
- Highet, Gilbert. The Classical Tradition. London: Oxford University Press, 1959.

- Hunter, G.K. John Lyly. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1962.
- Jebb, R.C. The Attic Orators, I. New York: Macmillan and Company, 1893.
- Jeffery, Violet M. John Lyly and the Italian Renaissance. Paris: Librairie Ancienne Honore Champion, 1928.
- Lacroix, Paul. Science and Literature in The Middle Ages. London: Bickers and Son, 1878.
- Norden, Eduard. Die Antike Kunstprosa, II. Verlagsge-  
sellschaft: B.G. Teubner, 1958.
- Ogilvie, Robert M. The Romans and Their Gods. London:  
Chatto and Windus Ltd., 1969.
- Perry, Ben Edwin. The Ancient Romances. Los Angeles:  
University of California Press, 1967, and
- The Metamorphosis Ascribed to Lucius of Patriae.  
Lancaster, Pennsylvania: The New Era Printing Company,  
1920.
- Purser, Louis C., ed. The Story of Cupid and Psyche.  
London: George Bell and Sons, 1910.
- Ringler, William. "The Immediate Source of Euphuism."  
PMLA, 1938.
- Sandys, J.E. A Short History of Classical Scholarship.  
Cambridge: The University Press, 1915, and
- M. Tulli Ciceronis Ad M. Brutum Orator. Cambridge:  
At The University Press, 1885.
- Scobie, Alexander. Aspects of the Ancient Romance and its  
Heritage. Verlag Anton Hain: Meisenheim am Glan, 1969.
- Walsh, P.G. The Roman Novel. Cambridge: University Press,  
1970.
- Weymouth, Richard F. "On Euphuism."
- Williamson, George. The Senecan Amble. Chicago, Illinois:  
The University of Chicago Press, 1951.
- Wilson, John Lyde, ed. Cupid and Psyche: A Mythological  
Tale from The Golden Ass of Apuleius. Charleston,  
South Carolina: B.B. Gussey, 1842.